MEAN FIELD EQUATIONS, HYPERELLIPTIC CURVES AND MODULAR FORMS: I

CHING-LI CHAI, CHANG-SHOU LIN, AND CHIN-LUNG WANG

ABSTRACT. We develop a theory connecting the following three areas: (a) the mean field equation (MFE)
\[ \Delta u + e^u = \rho \delta_0, \quad \rho \in \mathbb{R}_> 0 \]
on flat tori \( E_\tau = \mathbb{C}/(\mathbb{Z} + Z\tau) \), (b) the classical Lamé equations and (c) modular forms. A major theme in part I is a classification of developing maps \( f \) attached to solutions \( u \) of the mean field equation according to the type of transformation laws (monodromy) satisfied by \( f \).

We are especially interested in the case when the parameter \( \rho \) in the mean field equation is an integer multiple of \( 4\pi \). In the case when \( \rho = 4\pi(2n + 1) \) for a non-negative integer \( n \), we prove that the number of solutions is \( n + 1 \) except for a finite number of conformal isomorphism classes of flat tori, and we give a family of polynomials which characterize the developing maps for solutions of Lamé equations through the configuration of their zeros and poles. Modular forms appear naturally already in the simplest situation when \( \rho = 4\pi \).

In the case when \( \rho = 8\pi n \) for a positive integer \( n \), the solvability of the MFE depends on the moduli of the flat tori \( E_\tau \) and leads naturally to a hyperelliptic curve \( \bar{X}_n = \bar{X}_n(\tau) \) arising from the Hermite-Halphen ansatz solutions of Lamé’s differential equation
\[ \frac{d^2 w}{dz^2} - n(n + 1)\wp(z; \Lambda_\tau)w = 0. \]
We analyse the curve \( \bar{X}_n \) from both the analytic and the algebraic perspective, including its local coordinate near the point at infinity, a smooth point of \( \bar{X}_n \). We also specify the role of the branch points of the hyperelliptic projection \( \bar{X}_n \rightarrow \mathbb{P}^1 \) when the parameter \( \rho \) varies in a neighborhood of \( \rho = 8\pi n \). In part II, we study a “pre-modular form” \( Z_n(\sigma; \tau) \), a real-analytic function in two variables associated to \( \bar{X}_n(\tau) \), which has many symmetries and also the property that the \( \tau \)-coordinates of zeros of \( Z_n(\sigma; \tau) \) correspond exactly to those flat tori where the MFE with parameter \( \rho = 8\pi n \) has a solution.

CONTENTS
0. Introduction 2
1. Liouville equations with singular source 20
2. Type I solutions: Evenness and algebraic integrability 39
3. Lamé for type I: Finite monodromies 46
4. Singular Liouville equations with \( \rho = 4\pi \) and modular forms 54
5. Type II solutions: Evenness and Green’s functions 64
6. Lamé for type II: Characterizations of \( X_n \) and \( Y_n \) 78
7. Hyperelliptic geometry on \( \bar{X}_n \) 87
0. Introduction

0.1. How to study the geometry of a flat torus $E = E_\Lambda := \mathbb{C}/\Lambda$? There are at least two seemingly different approaches to this problem. In the first approach one studies the Green’s function $G = G_E$ of $E$, characterized by

\begin{equation}
\begin{cases}
-\Delta G = \delta_0 - \frac{1}{|E|} & \text{on } E, \\
\int_E G = 0,
\end{cases}
\end{equation}

where the Laplacian $\Delta = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial y^2} = 4 \partial_z \partial \bar{z}$ on $E$ is induced by the Laplacian of the covering space $\mathbb{C}$ of $E$, $|E| = \int_E dx dy = \frac{\sqrt{-1}}{2} \int_E dz \wedge d\bar{z}$ is the area of $E$, $\delta_0$ is the Dirac delta measure at the zero point $0 \in E$, and we have identified functions on $E$ with measures on $E$ using the Haar measure $dx dy = \frac{1}{2} |dz d\bar{z}|$ on $E$.

In the second approach one studies the classical Lamé equation

\begin{equation}
L_{\eta, B} w := w'' - (\eta (\eta + 1) \varphi(z) + B) w = 0
\end{equation}

with parameters $\eta \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$ and $B \in \mathbb{C}$, where $\varphi(z) = \varphi(z; \Lambda)$ is the Weierstrass elliptic function

$$
\varphi(z; \Lambda) = \frac{1}{z^2} + \sum_{w \in \Lambda \setminus \{0\}} \left( \frac{1}{(z-w)^2} - \frac{1}{w^2} \right), \quad z \in \mathbb{C}.
$$

0.1.1. The Green’s function is closely related to the so-called concentration phenomenon of some non-linear elliptic partial differential equation in two dimensions. For example, consider the following singular Liouville equation with parameter $\rho \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$

\begin{equation}
\Delta u + e^u = \rho \cdot \delta_0 \quad \text{on } E.
\end{equation}

It is proved in [8] that for a sequence of blow-up solutions $u_k$ of (0.1.3) corresponding to $\rho = \rho_k$ with $\rho_k \to 8\pi n$, $n \in \mathbb{Z}_{>0}$, the set $\{p_1, \cdots, p_n\}$ of

---

1So the first equation in (0.1.1) means that

$$
- \int_E G \cdot \Delta(f) \, dx \, dy = f(0) - |E|^{-1} \cdot \int_E f \, dx \, dy
$$

for all smooth functions $f \in C^\infty(E)$

2We imposed the condition $\eta > 0$ on the real parameter $\eta$ of the Lamé equation $L_{\eta, B}$ so that these Lamé equations are related to the mean field equations. The parameter $\eta$ are positive integers in classical literature such as [22] and [54].

3Equation (0.1.3) with parameter $\rho < 0$ is not very interesting—it becomes too easy.
blow-up points satisfies the following equations:

\[(0.1.4) \quad n \frac{\partial G}{\partial z}(p_i) = \sum_{1 \leq j \leq n, j \neq i} \frac{\partial G}{\partial z}(p_i - p_j) \quad \forall i = 1, \ldots, n.\]

For \(n = 1\), the blow-up set consists of only one point \(p\) which by (0.1.4) is a critical point of \(G\):

\[(0.1.5) \quad \frac{\partial G}{\partial z}(p) = 0.\]

Such a connection of (0.1.4) with the Green’s function also appears in many gauge field theories in physics. The well-known examples are the Chern–Simons–Higgs equation for the abelian case, and the \(SU(m)\) Toda system for the non-abelian case. See [37, 43, 44] and references therein.

This connection leads to the following question: How many solutions might the system (0.1.4) have? Or an even more basic question:

*How many critical points might the Green function \(G\) have?*

Surprisingly, this problem has never been answered until [34] where the second and the third authors proved the following result.

**Theorem A.** For any flat torus \(E\), the Green function \(G\) has either three or five critical points.

The statement of Theorem A looks deceptively simple at first sight. However its proof uses the non-linear PDE (0.1.3) and is not elementary.

0.1.2. In view of Theorem A it is natural to study the system (0.1.4) and the degeneracy question related to each solution of it. We will see in a moment that such an investigation leads naturally to a fundamental hyperelliptic curves \(\bar{X}_n\) (which varies with \(n\) and \(E\)), and requires us to study its geometry—especially the branch points for the hyperelliptic structural map \(\bar{X}_n \to \mathbb{P}^1\). The precise definition of \(X_n\) will later be given in (0.6.6).

In the literature there are at least two situations in which one encounters this hyperelliptic curve \(\bar{X}_n\). Both of them are related to the Lamé equation (0.1.2) with \(\eta \in \mathbb{N}_{>0}\). One of them is well-known, namely the spectral curve of the Lamé equation in the KdV theory. In §7 we will prove that this spectral curve is identical to the hyperelliptic curve \(\bar{X}_n\) (see Remark 7.4.3).

The second situation has a more algebraic flavor and is perhaps less known to the analysis community. Let

\[P(x) = 4x^3 - g_2(\Lambda)x - g_3(\Lambda).\]

The differential equation

\[(0.1.6) \quad P(x)\frac{d^2y}{dx^2} + \frac{1}{2}P'(x)\frac{dy}{dx} - (\eta(\eta + 1)x + B)y = 0\]

on \(\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})\) is related to (0.1.2) by the change of variable \(x = \wp(z; \Lambda)\), where \(P'(x) = \frac{d}{dx}P\). People have been interested in describing those parameters \(B\) so that the Lamé equation (0.1.6) has algebraic solutions only, or
equivalently the global monodromy group of (0.1.6) is finite. This question seems not to have been fully solved, though significant progress had been achieved and there are algorithms to generate all cases (see [3], [52], [16] and references therein).

0.1.3. A related and even more classical question is:

When is the global monodromy group of the Lamé equation (0.1.6) reducible? (i.e. there is a one dimensional subspace \( \mathbb{C} \cdot y_1(x) \) of the space of local solutions which is stable under the action of the fundamental group

\[
\pi_1(\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \setminus \{ \wp(z; \Lambda) \mid z \in (1/2)\Lambda/\Lambda \})
\]

of the complement of the 4 singular points of (0.1.6) on \( \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \). This question has a fairly complete answer:

(i) It is known that if the global monodromy group is reducible then the parameter \( \eta \) of the Lamé equation is an integer and the monodromy group is infinite.

(ii) If \( \mathbb{C} \cdot y_1(x) \) is a one-dimensional space of solutions of (0.1.6), then \( y_1(x) \) is an algebraic function in \( x \). Moreover solutions which are not multiples of \( y_1(x) \) are not algebraic in \( x \), and the action of the monodromy group of (0.1.6) is not completely reducible (as a two-dimensional linear representation of the fundamental group).

See [52, §4.4] and [3, §3].

0.1.4. For each fixed torus \( E \) and each \( n \in \mathbb{Z}_{>0} \), those parameters \( B \) such that the monodromy group of the Lamé equation \( L_{n,B} \) is reducible are characterized by the classical Theorem B below. Recall that a solution of (0.1.2) of the form \( y(\wp(z; \Lambda)) \) for an algebraic solution \( y(x) \) of (0.1.6) with \( \eta = n \) and \( \ell_n(B) = 0 \) is traditionally known as a Lamé function.\(^4\)

**Theorem B.** [22, 54, 45] Suppose that \( \eta = n \in \mathbb{N} \). Then there is a polynomial \( \ell_n(B) \) of degree \( 2n+1 \) in \( B \) such that equation (0.1.2) has a Lamé function as its solution if and only if \( \ell_n(B) = 0 \).

It turns out that the algebraic curve

\[
\{(B,C) \mid C^2 = \ell_n(B)\}
\]

\(^4\)When \( n \) is even, \( 1+(n/2) \) of the \( 2n+1 \) Lamé functions are polynomials of degree \( n/2 \) in \( \wp(z) \), and \( 3n/2 \) of the form \( \sqrt{(\wp(z) - \epsilon_i)(\wp(z) - \epsilon_j) \cdot Q(\wp(z))} \) for some polynomial \( Q(x) \) of degree \( (n/2) - 1 \) and some \( i \neq j \) with \( i, j = 1, 2 \) or 3, where \( \epsilon_i := \wp(\omega_i/2) \) for \( i = 1, 2 \) or 3. When \( n \) is odd, \( 3(n+1)/2 \) of the \( 2n+1 \) Lamé functions are of the form \( \sqrt{(\wp(z) - \epsilon_i) \cdot Q(\wp(z))} \) for some polynomial \( Q(x) \) of degree \( (n-1)/2 \) and some \( i = 1, 2 \) or 3, while the rest \( (n-1)/2 \) Lamé functions are of the form \( \wp(z) \cdot Q(\wp(z)) = \sqrt{(\wp(z) - \epsilon_1)(\wp(z) - \epsilon_2)(\wp(z) - \epsilon_3) \cdot Q(\wp(z))} \) for some polynomial \( Q(x) \) of degree \( (n-3)/2 \). Here \( \omega_1, \omega_2 \) is a \( \mathbb{Z} \)-basis of \( \Lambda \) with \( \text{Im}(\omega_2/\omega_1) > 0 \), and \( \omega_3 = -\omega_1 - \omega_2 \).
is identical to “the affine part” $Y_n$ of a complete hyperelliptic curve $\tilde{X}_n$, to be defined later in (0.5.3). Such an identification was only implicitly stated in Halphen’s classic [22]. In this paper we will give a detailed and rigorous proof of the statement; see Theorem 0.7). See [22, Ch. 12], [54, Ch. 23] and [45, Ch. 9] for traditional treatment of the Lamé equation.

0.1.5. The main theme of this paper is to explore the connection between the Liouville equation (0.1.3) and the Lamé equation (0.1.2) when the parameter $\rho$ in (0.1.3) and the parameter $\eta$ in (0.1.2) satisfies the linear relation $\eta = \rho/8\pi$. Equation (0.1.3) has its origin in the prescribed curvature problem in conformal geometry. In general, for any compact Riemann surface $(M, g)$ we may consider the following equation

\[(0.1.7) \quad \Delta u + e^u - 2K = 4\pi \sum_{j=1}^{n} \alpha_j \delta_{Q_j} \quad \text{on } M,\]

where $K = K(x)$ is the Gaussian curvature of the given metric $g$ at $x \in M$, $Q_j \in M$ are distinct points, and $\alpha_j > -1$ are constants.\(^6\) For any solution $u(x)$ to (0.1.7), the Gaussian curvature of the new metric

$$\tilde{g} := \frac{1}{2} e^u \cdot g$$

has constant Gaussian curvature $\tilde{K} = 1$ outside those $Q_j$'s. Since (0.1.7) has singular sources at the $Q_j$'s, the metric $\frac{1}{2} e^u g$ may degenerate at $Q_j$ for each $j$ and is called a metric on $M$ with \textit{conic singularities} at the points $Q_j$'s.

\textbf{Digression.} There is also an application of (0.1.3) to the complex Monge-Ampère equation:

\[(0.1.8) \quad \det \left( \frac{\partial^2 w}{\partial z_i \partial \bar{z}_j} \right)_{1 \leq i,j \leq d} = e^{-w} \quad \text{on } (E \setminus \{0\})^d,\]

where $(E \setminus \{0\})^d$ is the $d$-th Cartesian product of $E \setminus \{0\}$. Obviously, for any solution $u$ to (0.1.3), the function

$$w(z_1, \ldots, z_d) = -\sum_{i=1}^{d} u(z_i) + d \log 4$$

satisfies (0.1.8) with a logarithmic singularity along the normal crossing divisor $D = E^d \setminus (E \setminus \{0\})^d$. In particular, bubbling solutions to (0.1.3) will give examples of bubbling solutions to the complex Monge-Ampère equation (0.1.8), whose bubbling behavior could be understood from our theory developed in this paper. Those examples might be useful for studying of geometry related to the degenerate complex Monge-Ampère equations.

\(^5\)In this article $2\eta = \rho/4\pi \in \mathbb{Z}_{\eta > 0}$ most of the time.
\(^6\)The points $Q_j$ and the constants $\alpha_j$ are regarded as parameters of (0.1.7)).
0.1.6. Equation (0.1.7) is a special case of a general class of equations, called mean field equations:

\[(0.1.9) \quad \Delta u + \rho \left( \int h e^u - \frac{1}{|M|} \right) = 4\pi \sum_{j=1}^{n} \alpha_j \left( \delta_{Q_j} - \frac{1}{|M|} \right) \text{ on } M,\]

where \( h(x) \) is a positive \( C^1 \)-function on \( M \) and \( \rho \) is a positive real number. Equation (0.1.9) arises not only from geometry, but also from many applications in physics. For example it appears in statistical physics as the equation for the mean field limit of the Euler flow in Onsager’s vortex model, hence its name. Recently the equation (0.1.9) was shown to be related to the self-dual condensation of the Chern–Simons–Higgs model. We refer the readers to [6, 13, 37, 38, 43, 44] and references therein for recent developments on this subject.

Equation (0.1.9) has been studied extensively for over three decades. It can be proved that outside of a countable set of critical parameters \( \rho \), solutions \( u \) of (0.1.3) have uniform a priori bounds in \( C^2_{loc}(M \setminus \{Q_1, \ldots, Q_n\}) \):

For any closed interval \( I \) not containing any of the critical parameters and any compact subset \( \Phi \subset M \setminus \{Q_1, \ldots, Q_n\} \), there exists a constant \( C_{I,\Phi} \) such that \( |u(z)| \leq C_{I,\Phi} \) for all \( z \in \Phi \) and every solution \( u(z) \) of (0.1.3) with parameter \( \rho \in I \); see [4, 8, 10, 32].

The existence of uniform a priori bounds for solutions of (0.1.3) in the preceding paragraph implies that the topological Leray-Schauder degree \( d_{\rho} \) is well-defined when \( \rho \) is a non-critical parameter. Recently, an explicit degree counting formula has been proved in [9, 11], which has the following consequence:

Suppose that \( \rho \in (\mathbb{R}_{>0} \setminus 8\pi \mathbb{N}) \), \( \alpha_j \in \mathbb{N} \) for all \( j \) and the genus \( g(M) \) of \( M \) is at least 1. Then \( d_{\rho} > 0 \), hence the mean field equation (0.1.9) has a solution.

However when \( \rho \in 8\pi \mathbb{N}_{>0} \), a priori bounds for solutions of (0.1.9) might not exist, and the existence of solutions becomes an intricate question. The singular Liouville equation (0.1.3) on flat tori with \( \rho \in 8\pi \mathbb{N}_{>0} \) is the simplest class of mean field equations where the parameter \( \rho \) is critical, and the existence problem for equation (0.1.3) is already a delicate one in the case when \( \rho = 8\pi \). In [34] the second and third authors proved that equation (0.1.3) has a solution if and only if the Green’s function on the torus has five critical points; c.f. Theorem A in 0.1.1.
0.1.7. In this paper we will consider the case when the parameter $\rho$ is of the form $\rho = 4\pi l$ for some positive integer $l \in \mathbb{Z}_{>0}$. We note that if $l$ is odd, $\rho = 4\pi l$ is not a critical parameter. In this case the degree counting formula in [11, 12] gives the following result:

**Theorem C.** Suppose that $l = 2n + 1$ is a positive odd integer. Then the Leray-Schauder degree $d_{4\pi l}$ of equation (0.1.3) is \( \frac{1}{2}(l + 1) = n + 1 \).

Theorem C will be sharpened in corollaries 0.4.2 and 3.5.1 to:

Let $\rho = 4\pi (2l + 1)$ for some $l \in \mathbb{Z}_{>0}$. Except for a finite number of tori up to isomorphism, equation (0.1.3) has exactly $n + 1$ solutions.

0.2. The above sharpening of Theorem C will be established via the connection between the Liouville equation (0.1.3) and the Lamé equation (0.1.2). Indeed the equation (0.1.3) is locally completely integrable according to the following theorem of Liouville:

Any solution $u$ to (0.1.3) can be expressed locally on $E \setminus \Lambda$ as

(0.2.1) \[ u(z) = \log \frac{8|f'(z)|^2}{(1 + |f(z)|^2)^2} \quad \forall z \in E \setminus \{0\}, \]

where $f(z)$ is a multi-valued meromorphic function on $\mathbb{C} \setminus \Lambda$ (i.e. a meromorphic function on an unramified covering of $\mathbb{C} \setminus \Lambda$) such that the right hand side of the above displayed expression is well defined function on $\mathbb{C} \setminus \Lambda$.

Such a function $f$ is called a developing map of the solution $u$ of (0.1.3).

0.2.1. When $\rho = 4\pi l$, $l \in \mathbb{Z}_{>0}$, it is a fact that every developing map $f(z)$ of a solution of (0.1.3) extends to a single valued meromorphic function on $\mathbb{C}$. Such a developing map $f$ is not doubly periodic in general; rather it is SU(2)-automorphic for the period lattice $\Lambda$:

for every $\omega \in \Lambda$ there exists an element \( \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in \text{SU}(2) \) such that $f(z + \omega) = \frac{az + b}{cz + d}$ for all $z \in \mathbb{C}$.

Moreover $f(z)$ has multiplicity $l + 1$ at points of the lattice $\Lambda \subset \mathbb{C}$, and no critical point elsewhere on $\mathbb{C}$. Conversely every meromorphic function $f(z)$ on $\mathbb{C}$ satisfying the above two properties is the developing map of a solution of (0.1.3); see Lemma 1.2.4.

---

\[ \text{Later we will use another parameter } \eta, \text{ related to } \rho \text{ by } \eta := \frac{\rho}{4\pi}, \text{ so the parameter } l \text{ here is equal to } 2\eta. \] When $\eta \in \frac{1}{2}\mathbb{Z}_{>0}$, solutions of the Liouville equation (0.1.3) are related to the Lamé equation (0.1.2).
0.2.2. After replacing \( f \) by \( a_{11}f + b_{11} \) for a suitable element \( \begin{pmatrix} a_{11} & b_{11} \\ c_{11} & d_{11} \end{pmatrix} \in \text{SU}(2) \) we get a \textit{normalized} developing map \( f \) satisfying one of the following conditions:

(i) Type I (the monodromy of \( f \) is a Klein four):

\[
\begin{align*}
  f(z + \omega_1) &= -f(z) \\
  f(z + \omega_2) &= \frac{1}{f(z)} & \forall z \in \mathbb{C}.
\end{align*}
\]

(ii) Type II (the monodromy of \( f \) is contained in a maximal torus): There exist real numbers \( \theta_1, \theta_2 \) such that

\[
\begin{align*}
  f(z + \omega_i) &= e^{2\theta_i}f(z) & \forall z \in \mathbb{C}, \forall i = 1, 2.
\end{align*}
\]

Here \( \omega_1, \omega_2 \) is a \( \mathbb{Z} \)-basis of the lattice \( \Lambda \) corresponding to the torus \( E \) such that \( \text{Im}(\omega_2/\omega_1) > 0 \). See §1 for more details.

0.2.3. We have seen that when the parameter \( \rho \) of the Liouville equation (0.1.3) is \( 4\pi l \) with \( l \in \mathbb{N}_{>0} \), solving (0.1.3) is equivalent to finding normalized developing maps, i.e. meromorphic functions on \( \mathbb{C} \) with multiplicity \( l + 1 \) at points of the lattice \( \Lambda \) and no critical points on \( \mathbb{C} \setminus \Lambda \), whose monodromy with respect to \( \Lambda \) is specified as one of the two types above. It turns out that Liouville equation (0.1.3) with \( \rho/4\pi \in \mathbb{N}_{>0} \) is integrable in the sense that the configuration of the zeros and poles of such a normalized developing map can be described by either system of polynomial equations, or as the zero locus of a \( \mathbb{C} \)-valued real analytic function on an algebraic variety. In other words the Liouville equation (0.1.3) with \( \rho/4\pi \in \mathbb{N}_{>0} \) is integrable in the sense that the problem of solving this partial differential equation is reduced to finding the zero locus of some explicit system of equations on a finite dimensional space; see (0.4) and (0.6) below.

0.2.4. Let \( f(z) \) be a developing map of a solution \( u(z) \) of the Liouville equation (0.1.3). Of course the formula (0.2.1) expresses \( u \) in terms of \( f \). There is a simple way to “recover” the developing map \( f \) from \( u \) for a general parameter \( \rho \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \). Notice first that \( \frac{\partial}{\partial \bar{z}} \) of (0.1.3) gives

\[
\frac{\partial}{\partial z} \left( \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial \bar{z} \partial z} - \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{\partial u}{\partial \bar{z}} \right)^2 \right) = \frac{\rho}{4} \frac{\partial}{\partial \bar{z}} \delta_0,
\]

which implies that \( u_{zz} - \frac{1}{4}u_z^2 \) is a meromorphic function on \( E \). A simple computation using (0.2.1) gives the following formula of this meromorphic function in terms of the developing map \( f \) of \( u \):

\[
(0.2.2) \quad u_{zz} - \frac{1}{4}u_z^2 = \frac{f'''}{f'} - \frac{3}{2} \left( \frac{f''}{f'} \right)^2.
\]

The right hand side of (0.2.2) is the \textit{Schwarzian derivative} \( S(f) \) of the meromorphic function \( f \), while the left hand side is \( \Lambda \)-periodic, with only one singularity at 0 which is a pole of order at most 2, hence must be equal to a
C-linear combination of the Weierstrass function $\wp(z; \Lambda)$ and the constant function 1. It is not difficult to determine the coefficient of $\wp(z; \Lambda)$ in this linear combination: We know from equation (0.1.3) that

$$u(z) = 2l \cdot \log |z| + (a C^\infty \text{-function})$$

for all $z$ in a neighborhood of $0 \in E$. A straightforward calculation shows that either $f(z)$ has a pole of order $l + 1$ at $z = 0$, or $f(z)$ is holomorphic at $z = 0$ and its derivative $f'(z)$ has a zero of order $l$ at $z = 0$. In either case the Schwarzian derivative $S(f)$ has a double pole at 0 and

$$\lim_{z \to 0} z^2 S(f) = (l + 2)(l + 3) - \frac{3}{2}(l + 2)^2 = -(l^2 + 2l)/2.$$ 

In other words there exists a constant $B \in C$ such that

$$(0.2.3) \quad S(f) = -2(\eta(\eta + 1)\wp(z) + B),$$

where $\eta := \frac{\rho}{8\pi} = \frac{l}{2}$.

On the other hand it is well-known that the “potential” of a second order linear ODE can be recovered from the Schwarzian derivative of the ratio of two linear independent (local) solutions of the ODE. In the case of the Lamé equation (0.1.2) this general fact specializes as follows.

If $w_1, w_2$ are two linearly independent local solutions to the Lamé equation $L_{\eta, B} w = 0$ in (0.1.2) with a general parameters $\eta$ and $B$ and $h(z) := w_1(z)/w_2(z)$, then

$$S(h) = -2(\eta(\eta + 1)\wp(z) + B).$$

Combining the above discussions, we conclude:

If $\eta = \rho/8\pi$ is either a positive integer or a positive half-integer, then any developing map $f(z)$ of a solution $u(z)$ to (0.1.3) can be expressed as a ratio of two $C$-linearly independent solutions of the Lamé equation (0.1.2) for some $B \in C$.

We say that the Lamé equation $L_{\eta, B} w = 0$ on $C/\Lambda$ corresponds to a solution $u$ of (0.1.3) on $C/\Lambda$ with $\rho = 8\pi \eta \in 4\pi \cdot Z_{>0}$ if there exist two linearly independent meromorphic solutions $w_1, w_2$ of $L_{\eta, B} w = 0$ on $C$ such that $w_1/w_2$ is a developing map of $u$. This is a property of the parameter $B$ of the Lamé equation.

0.2.5. We make a simple observation about a normalized developing map of a solution to (0.1.3) with $\rho/4\pi \in Z_{>0}$.

---

8The “constant” $B \in C$ depends on both the (isomorphism class of) the flat torus $E$ and the solution $u(z)$ of (0.1.3).
If $f(z)$ is normalized of type II, then $e^{\lambda}f(z)$ also satisfies the type II condition for all $\lambda \in \mathbb{R}$. Thus (0.2.1) gives rise to a scaling family of solutions $u_\lambda(z)$, where

\begin{equation}
(0.2.4) \quad u_\lambda(z) = \log \frac{8e^{2\lambda}|f'(z)|^2}{(1 + e^{2\lambda}|f(z)|^2)^2}.
\end{equation}

Consequently if (0.1.3) has a type II solution, then the same equation has infinitely many solutions.

From (0.2.4), it is easy to see that $u_\lambda(z)$ blows up as $\lambda \to \pm \infty$. As we have discussed earlier, if $\rho = 4\pi l$ with $l = 2n + 1$ an odd positive integer, then solutions of (0.1.3) have a priori bound in $C^2_{\text{loc}}(E \setminus \{0\})$. Thus we conclude that when $\rho = 4\pi l$ with $l$ a positive odd integer, (0.1.3) has a solution because the topological degree is positive. Moreover such a solution must be of type I by the existence of uniform a priori bound on compact subsets of $E \setminus \{0\}$.

Our first main theorem in this paper says that the converse to the statement in the previous paragraph also holds. At the same time we provide a self-contained proof of the above implication without using the uniform a priori bound:

**Theorem 0.3** (c.f. Proposition 1.6 and Theorem 2.5). Let $\rho = 4\pi l$ with $l \in \mathbb{Z}_{>0}$. Then equation (0.1.3) admits a type I solution if and only if $l$ is odd.

We will “classify” type I solutions for an odd positive integer $l = 2n + 1$ in the next theorem 0.4. Let $f(z)$ be a developing map of a solution of (0.1.3) satisfying the normalized transformation formula of type I

\[ f(z + \omega_1) = -f(z), \quad f(z + \omega_2) = \frac{1}{f(z)} \]

for a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis $\omega_1, \omega_2$ of the lattice $\Lambda$ with $\text{Im}(\omega_2/\omega_1) > 0$. Consider the logarithmic derivative $g = (\log f)' = f'/f$, which is an elliptic function on the double cover

\[ E' := \mathbb{C}/\Lambda' \to E, \]

of $E$, where

\[ \Lambda' := \mathbb{Z}\omega_1' + \mathbb{Z}\omega_2', \quad \omega_1' := \omega_1 \text{ and } \omega_2' := 2\omega_2. \]

Our next goal is to find all possible type I developing maps $f$ for some solution $u$ of the Liouville equation (0.1.3) whose parameter $\rho$ is an odd integral multiple of $4\pi$. To do so, we have to locate the position of poles of $g$, or equivalently the position of zeros and poles of $f$. In the following Theorem 0.4 $E' := C/\Lambda'$, and we will use the Weierstrass elliptic function $\wp(z) = \wp(z; \Lambda')$ for the lattice $\Lambda'$ and the half-periods

\[ e_i := \wp\left(\frac{i}{2}\omega_j'; \Lambda'\right) \]

for $\Lambda'$. 
Theorem 0.4 (Type I evenness and algebraic integrability). Let $u$ be a solution to (0.1.3) with $\rho = 4\pi(2n + 1)$, $n \in \mathbb{Z}_{\geq 0}$. Let $f$ be a normalized type I developing map of $u$, let $\Lambda' = \mathbb{Z} \cdot \omega_1 + \mathbb{Z} \cdot 2\omega_2 = \mathbb{Z} \cdot \omega'_1 + \mathbb{Z} \cdot \omega'_2$, and let $e_i := \phi\left(\frac{i}{2} \omega'_i ; \Lambda'\right)$ for $i = 1, 2$ as in the preceding paragraph.

1. The solution $u(z)$ is even and the developing map $f(z)$ of $u(z)$ is also even; i.e. $u(-z) = u(z)$ for all $z \in E$ and $f(z) = f(-z)$ for all $z \in \mathbb{C}$.
2. There exist $p_1, \ldots, p_n \in \mathbb{C}$ satisfying the following properties.
   - $2p_i \not\in \Lambda'$ for $i = 1, \ldots, n$,
   - $p_i \pm p_j \not\in \Lambda'$ for all $i \neq j$, $1 \leq i, j \leq n$,
   - $f$ has simple zeros at $\frac{1}{2} \omega_1$ and $\pm p_i$ for $i = 1, \ldots, n$,
   - $f$ has simple poles at $\frac{1}{2} \omega_1 + \omega_2$ and $\pm p_i + \omega_2$ for $i = 1, \ldots, n$.
   - Every zero or pole of $f$ is congruent modulo $\Lambda'$ to one of the zeros or poles listed above.

Note that the unordered set $\{p_i \mod \Lambda'\} \subset E'$ is uniquely determined by the normalized developing map $f$.

3. Let $q_i := p_i + \omega_2$, $i = 1, \ldots, n$ for $i = 1, \ldots, n$ and let
   \[ z_i := \phi(p_i; \Lambda') - e_2, \quad \tilde{z}_i = \phi(q_i; \Lambda') - e_2. \]

There exist constants $\mu$ and $C_1, \ldots, C_n$ which depend only on the modular constants $e_1, e_2$, $g_2(\Lambda')$ and $g_3(\Lambda')$ such that the following polynomial equations hold.

\begin{equation}
\sum_{i=1}^{n} z_i^j - \sum_{i=1}^{n} \tilde{z}_i^j = C_j \quad \text{and} \quad z_i \tilde{z}_j = \mu \quad \forall j = 1, \ldots, n. \tag{0.4.1}
\end{equation}

4. Conversely let $\mu, C_1, \ldots, C_n$ be the constants in (3), and suppose that the 2n-tuple $(z_1, \ldots, z_n; \tilde{z}_1, \ldots, \tilde{z}_n) \in \mathbb{C}^{2n}$ is a solution of the system of polynomial equations (0.4.1). There is an even type I developing map $f$ and $p_1, \ldots, p_n \in \mathbb{C}$ with the following properties:
   - $f$ has simple zeros at $\frac{1}{2} \omega_1$ and $\pm p_i$ for $i = 1, \ldots, n$.
   - $f$ has simple poles at $\frac{1}{2} \omega_1 + \omega_2$ and $\pm p_i + \omega_2$ for $i = 1, \ldots, n$.
   - $z_i = \phi(p_i; \Lambda') - e_2$ and $\tilde{z}_i = \phi(p_i + \omega_2; \Lambda') - e_2$ for $i = 1, \ldots, n$.

We will prove Theorem 0.4 in §2. In view of this result, it is interesting to know how many solutions the system (0.4.1) has. Since the topological degree for (0.1.3) with $\rho = 4\pi(2n + 1)$ is known to be $n + 1$ (by Theorem C), it is reasonable to conjecture that (0.1.3) has $n + 1$ solutions, and then (0.4.1) has $(n + 1)!$ solutions due to the permutation symmetry on $\{1, 2, \ldots, n\}$ (c.f. [35, Conjecture 6.1] where a related version of this counting conjecture was first formulated). This conjecture had been verified previously up to $n \leq 5$ (c.f. Remark 2.12). However for higher $n$ it seems to be a non-trivial task to work on the affine polynomial system (0.4.1) directly.

We will affirm this conjecture using the connection between the Liouville equation (0.1.3) and the Lamé equation (0.1.2) discussed earlier.
Theorem 0.4.1. For any \( n \in \mathbb{N}_{\geq 0} \), the projective monodromy group of a Lamé equation \( L_{n+1/2} w = 0 \) on \( E \) is isomorphic to \((\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z}) \times (\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z})\) if and only if it corresponds to a type I solution of (0.1.3), in the sense that there exist two meromorphic functions \( w_1, w_2 \) on \( \mathbb{C} \) such that \( L_{n+1/2} w_1 = 0 = L_{n+1/2} B w_2 \) and the quotient \( w_1 / w_2 \) is a developing map of a solution of a Liouville equation (0.1.3) with \( \rho = 4\pi(2n+1) \) and the monodromy group for \( w_1 / w_2 \) is isomorphic to \((\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z}) \times (\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z})\). Moreover, each parameter \( B \) with the above property corresponds to exactly one type I solution of (0.1.3).

Theorem 0.4.1 will be proved in §3, Theorem 3.5. Its proof shows that the number of solutions to (0.1.3) with \( \rho = 4\pi(2n+1) \) is equal to the number of \( B \)'s in \( \mathbb{C} \) such that all solutions to \( L_{n+1/2} B w = 0 \) are without logarithmic singularity. A classical theorem of Brioschi, Halphen and Crawford says that there exists a polynomial \( p_n(B) \) of degree \( n+1 \) in \( B \) whose roots are exactly the parameter values having the above property. Hence we have the following corollary which sharpens Theorem C:

Corollary 0.4.2. Let \( \rho = 4\pi(2n+1), n \in \mathbb{Z}_{\geq 0} \). There exists a finite set \( S_n \) of tori such that for every torus not isomorphic to anyone in the exceptional set \( S_n \) the Liouville equation (0.1.3) possesses exactly \( n+1 \) distinct solutions.

0.4.3. In §3 we will also give a new proof of the Brioschi-Halphen-Crawford theorem by exploring the fact that the ratio \( f = w_1 / w_2 \) of two linearly independent solutions of the Lamé equation \( L_{n+1/2} B w = 0 \) satisfies the equation (0.2.3) for the Schwarzian derivative with \( \eta = n+\frac{1}{2} \); see Theorem 3.2. The new proof has several advantages. It provides a convenient way to compute the polynomial \( p_n(B) \) for each \( n \). Moreover it is local in nature. Thus it can be used to treat the mean field equation with multiple singular sources of the form

\[
\triangle u + e^{u} = 4\pi \sum_{j=1}^{l} \alpha_j \delta_{Q_j} \quad \text{on } E,
\]

where \( Q_1, \ldots, Q_l \) are distinct points in \( E \) and \( \alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_l \) are positive integers. In a forthcoming paper [7] we will prove that for generic \( Q_1, \ldots, Q_n \in E \), equation (0.4.2) has exactly

\[
\frac{1}{2} \prod_{j=1}^{l}(\alpha_j + 1)
\]
distinct solutions provided that \( \sum_{j=1}^{l} \alpha_j \) is an odd positive integer.

An immediate consequence of Corollary 0.4.2 is a solution of the counting conjecture stated in the paragraph after 0.4:

There exists a finite set \( S_n \) of tori such that for every torus not isomorphic to anyone in the exceptional set \( S_n \) the polynomial system (0.4.1) has \((n+1)!\) solutions.

This might be helpful when we come to study the excess intersection at \( \infty \) for the projectivized version of the system of equations (0.4.1) for general \( n \).
0.4.4. Another important consequence of Theorem 0.4 is the holomorphic dependency of \( f(z; \tau) \) on the moduli variable \( \tau = \omega_2/\omega_1 \) in the upper half plane \( \mathbb{H} \) for normalized developing maps \( f(z; \tau) \) of solution to (0.1.3) with \( \rho = 4\pi(2n + 1) \) as in (0.4); we have not been able to prove this statement directly from Liouville’s equation (0.1.3). The modular dependency of the constants \( \mu, C_j \)’s in Theorem 0.4 indicates that the normalized developing map might be invariant under modular transformations of \( \tau \) for some congruence subgroup of \( SL_2(\mathbb{Z}) \). To illustrate this connection between (0.1.3) and modular forms, we will consider in \( \S 4 \) the simplest case \( \rho = 4\pi \), where (0.1.3) has exactly one solution for any torus. In this situation we can specify a unique developing map \( f(z; \tau) \) on \( E_\tau = \mathbb{C}/\Lambda_\tau \), where \( \Lambda_\tau = \mathbb{Z} + \mathbb{Z}_\tau \) and \( \tau \in \mathbb{H} \). The expansion of \( f(z; \tau) \) at \( z = 0 \) reads as

\[
f(z; \tau) = a_0(\tau) + a_2(\tau)z^2 + a_4(\tau)z^4 + \cdots.
\]

Then each \( a_k(\tau) \) is a modular form of weight \( k \) for the principal congruence subgroup \( \Gamma(4) \) which is holomorphic on the upper-half plane \( \mathbb{H} \) but may have poles at the cusps of the modular curve \( X(4) \); see Corollary 4.5. In addition we will show in \( \S 4 \) that the constant term \( a_0(\tau) \) of \( f(z; \tau) \) is a \( \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{-1}) \)-rational Hauptmodul which is also a modular unit; i.e. (a) \( a_0(\tau) \) is holomorphic and everywhere non-zeron on \( \mathbb{H} \), (b) \( a_0(\tau) \) defines a meromorphic function on \( X(4) \) with \( \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{-1}) \)-rational \( q \)-expansion at all cusps of \( X(4) \), and (c) every meromorphic function on \( X(4) \) is a rational function of \( a_0(\tau) \). See Corollary 4.4 and Remark 4.4.1(b). In a forthcoming paper we will consider equation (0.4.2) with multiple singular sources and show that for each \( k \) the space of modular forms of weight \( k \) arising from (0.4.2) is invariant under (suitably defined) Hecke operators.

0.5. Next we want to classify solutions of the Liouville equation (0.1.3) with \( \rho = 8\pi n \) for some positive integer \( n \). By Theorem 0.3 any solution of (0.1.3), if exists, must be of type II. Hence any solution of (0.1.3) begets infinitely many solutions. We remark that not every torus admits a solution to (0.1.3). For instance when \( \rho = 8\pi \), there are no solutions to (0.1.3) for rectangular tori, while there do exist solutions for \( \tau = \omega_2/\omega_1 \) close to \( e^{\pi i/3} \) (c.f. [34, Example 2.5, 2.6]). Indeed [34, Theorem 1.1] asserts that in the case when \( \rho = 8\pi \), the Liouville equation (0.1.3) has a solution if and only the Green’s function \( G_E \) for the torus has a critical point which is not a 2-torsion. Hence by Theorem A the Liouville equation (0.1.3) with \( \rho = 8\pi \) has a solution for if and only if the Green function has five critical points. Let \( M_1 = SL(2, \mathbb{Z}) \backslash \mathbb{H} \) and let

\[
\Omega_5 := \{ \tau \in M_1 \mid G(z; \tau) \text{ has five critical points} \}.
\]

By the uniqueness theorem in [34, Theorem 4.1], we know that \( \Omega_5 \) is open; while it is easy to see (using the holomorphic \( (\mathbb{Z}/3\mathbb{Z}) \)-action on the torus) that the image of \( \frac{-1+\sqrt{-1}}{2} \) in \( M_1 \) lies in \( \Omega_5 \). It is important to further investigate the geometry of this moduli subset \( \Omega_5 \). In Part II of this series of
papers, we shall use methods for non-linear PDE’s to the Liouville equation (0.1.3) and the theory of modular forms to prove that $\Omega$ is a simply connected domain and the boundary $\partial \Omega$ of $\Omega$ is real-analytically isomorphic to a circle, thereby settling the conjecture on the shape of $\Omega$ raised in [34, §1 p. 915].

0.5.1. In this paper (Part I of the series), we want to classify all type II solutions for general $n \in \mathbb{Z}_{>0}$ and study their connection with the geometry of a family of hyperelliptic curve. This will form the foundation of an investigation on certain modular forms to be developed in Part II of this series [36].

We will also consider the logarithmic derivative $g = f' / f$ of a normalized type I developing map $f$. The type II condition implies that $g$ is an elliptic function on $E = E_\Lambda$.

0.5.2. As was explained in 0.2.4, the Liouville equation (0.1.3) is related to the Lamé equation (0.1.2) whose parameter $\eta$ is equal to $\rho / 8\pi$. In the case when $\eta$ is a positive integer $n$, there are explicit formulas for solutions, of the Lamé equation (0.1.2) called the Hermite-Halphen ansatz:

For any $a_1, \ldots, a_n \in \mathbb{C} \setminus \Lambda$ such that the images $[a_i] \in E$ of $a_i$ under the projection $\mathbb{C} \to E = \mathbb{C} / \Lambda$, $i = 1, \ldots, n$, represent $n$ mutually distinct points in $E \setminus \{0\}$, the function

$$w_a(z) = e^{\sum_{i=1}^n \xi(a_i; \Lambda)} \prod_{i=1}^n \frac{\sigma(z - a_i; \Lambda)}{\sigma(z; \Lambda)}$$

is a solution to (0.1.2) for some $B \in \mathbb{C}$ if and only if $\{[a_i]\} \in Y_n \subset \text{Sym}^n(E \setminus \{0\})$, where

$$Y_n := \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n] \mid [a_i] \in E \setminus \{0\} \forall i, [a_i] \neq [a_j] \text{ for all } i \neq j, \sum_{1 \leq j \leq n, j \neq i} (\zeta(a_i - a_j) + \zeta(a_j - a_i)) = 0, \text{ for } i = 1, \ldots, n.\}
$$

Moreover if $\{[a_i]\}_{i=1}^n$ is a point of $Y_n$ and $w_a(z)$ is a solution of a Lamé equation (0.1.2) with $\eta = n$, then $B = (2n - 1) \sum_{i=1}^n \varphi(a_i)$.

Note that $w_b(z) \in \mathbb{C}^\times \cdot w_a(z)$ if $b = (b_1, \ldots, b_n)$ and $b_i \equiv a_i \text{ (mod } \Lambda)$ $i = 1, \ldots, n$.

0.5.3. The following properties are known from classical literature.

(i) Each ansatz solution $w_a(z)$ of $L_{n,B}w = 0$ satisfies

$$w_a(z + \omega) = e^{\sum_{i=1}^n \xi(a_i; \Lambda)\omega - \sum_{i=1}^n a_i \eta(\omega; \Lambda)} \cdot w_a(z) \quad \forall \omega \in \Lambda.$$

In other words $w_a(z)$ is a common eigenvector for the global monodromy representation of $\Lambda = \pi_1(E)$ on the 2-dimensional space of local solutions of the Lamé equation $L_{n,B}w = 0$.

---

9 This phenomenon was observed in computer simulations.

10 c.f. [24, I–VII] and [22, pp. 495-498]
(ii) Every one-dimensional eigenspace of the monodromy representation of a Lamé equation \( L_n B w = 0 \) is of the form \( C \cdot \psi(a_i) \) for some \( a \) such that \( B = (2n - 1) \sum_{i=1}^{n} \psi(a_i) \). In other words the map \( \pi : Y_n \to \mathbb{C} \) given by \( \{[a_i]\}_{i=1}^{n} \mapsto (2n - 1) \sum_{i=1}^{n} \psi(a_i) \) is surjective. Note that \( \pi \circ \iota = \pi \) for the involution \( \iota : \{[a_i]\}_{i=1}^{n} \mapsto \{[-a_i]\}_{i=1}^{n} \) on \( Y_n \).

(iii) For every \( B \in \mathbb{C} \), the set \( \pi^{-1}(B) \) is an orbit of the involution of \( \iota \), and \( \pi^{-1}(B) \) is a singleton if and only if \( L_n B w = 0 \) has a Lamé function as a solution.

The above properties tell us that \( Y_n \) can be regarded as the parameter space of all one-dimensional eigenspaces of the monodromy representations on the solutions of the Lamé equation \( L_n B w = 0 \) on \( E \) when the parameter \( B \) varies over \( \mathbb{C} \). This and the fact that \( \pi : Y_n \to \mathbb{C} \) is a double cover drives home the compelling picture that \( Y_n \) can be regarded as a “spectral curve” for the global monodromy representation.\(^{11}\) The algebraic structure on \( Y_n \) is explained in 0.5.4 below.

0.5.4. The analytic set of solutions of the system of equations

\[
(0.5.3) \quad \sum_{1 \leq j \leq n, j \neq i} \left( \zeta(a_i - a_j; \Lambda) + \zeta(a_j; \Lambda) - \zeta(a_i; \Lambda) \right) = 0 \quad \forall i = 1, \ldots, n
\]

in variables \( (a_1, \ldots, a_n) \) under the constraint that

\[ a_i \notin \Lambda \quad \forall i = 1, \ldots, n \quad \text{and} \quad a_i - a_j \notin \Lambda \quad \forall i \neq j \]

descends to a locally closed algebraic subvariety of

\[ \text{Sym}^n(E \setminus \{0\}) = (E \setminus \{0\})^n / S_n \]

because \( Y_n \) is stable under the symmetric group \( S_n \), and the classical formula\(^{12}\)

\[
\frac{1}{2} \frac{\psi'(z) + \psi'(w)}{\varphi(z) - \varphi(w)} = \zeta(z - w) - \zeta(z) + \zeta(w)
\]

for elliptic functions allows us to express the definition of \( Y_n \) algebraically: Let \( \hat{\Lambda} \) be the divisor of \( E^n \) consisting of all points of \( E^n \) where at least two components are equal, and let \( \Delta \) be the image of \( \hat{\Lambda} \) in \( \text{Sym}^n(E) \). Denote by \( U \) the algebraic variety \( (E \setminus \{0\})^n \setminus \Delta \).

\( Y_n \) is the closed subvariety of \( \text{Sym}^n(E \setminus \{0\}) \setminus \Delta \) whose inverse image \( \hat{Y}_n \) in the affine algebraic variety \( \hat{U} \) is defined by the system

---

\(^{11}\)This is more than an analogy: \( Y_n \) is indeed a spectral curve in KdV theory. It parametrizes one-dimensional common eigenspaces for the commutator subring of the differential operator \( \frac{d^2}{dz^2} - n(n+1)\varphi(z) \) in the ring of linear differential operators in one variable.

\(^{12}\)c.f. [54, 20-53 Example 2]
of equations

(0.5.4) \[ \sum_{1 \leq j \leq n, j \neq i} \frac{y_i + y_j}{x_i - x_j} = 0, \quad \forall i = 1, \ldots, n. \]

Here \( x_i, y_i \) are the pull-back via the \( i \)-th projection of coordinates of the Weierstrass form \( y^2 = 4x^3 - g_2(\Lambda)x - g_3(\Lambda) \) of \( E = \mathbb{C}/\Lambda \). For each pair \( i, j \) with \( i \neq j \) the regular function \( \frac{y_i + y_j}{x_i - x_j} \) on the affine open subset \( \tilde{U}[1/(x_i - x_j)] \) of \( \tilde{U} \) where \( x_i \neq x_j \) extends to a regular function on \( \tilde{U} \), therefore the above description defines an affine closed subvariety \( \tilde{Y}_n \) of \( \tilde{U} \).

In view of the algebraic structure of \( Y_n \), the classically known facts recalled in 0.5.3 means that \( Y_n \) is an affine part of a hyperelliptic curve and the \( \pi : Y_n \to \mathbb{C} \) is the restriction to \( Y_n \) of the hyperelliptic projection. On the other hand, solutions to the Liouville equation (0.1.3) with \( \rho = 8\pi n \) admit the following description.

**Theorem 0.6** (Type II evenness and Green/algebraic system). Let \( u \) be a solution to (0.1.3) with \( \rho = 8\pi n \) on \( E = \mathbb{C}/\Lambda \) and let \( f \) be a normalized developing map of \( u \) of type II.

1. The developing map \( f \) is a local unit at points of \( \Lambda \).
2. There are \( 2n \) elements \( p_1, \ldots, p_n, q_1, \ldots, q_n \in \mathbb{C} \) with the following properties.
   - \( [p_1], \ldots, [p_n], [q_1], \ldots, [q_n] \) are \( 2n \) distinct points in \( E \), where \( [p_i] := p_i \mod \Lambda \) for all \( i \) and similarly for the \( [q_i]'s \).
   - \( f \) has simple zeros at points above \( p_1, \ldots, p_n \) and simple poles at points above \( q_1, \ldots, q_n \).
   - \( f \) is holomorphic and non-zero at every point of \( \mathbb{C} \) which is not congruent modulo \( \Lambda \) to one of \( \{p_1, \ldots, p_n, q_1, \ldots, q_n\} \).
3. The zeros and poles of the developing map \( f \) are related by
   \[ \{[q_1], \ldots, [q_n]\} = \{[-p_1], \ldots, [-p_n]\}. \]
4. There is a unique even solution in the one-parameter scaling family of solutions \( u_\lambda(z) = \log \frac{8e^{\pi \lambda}}{(1+e^{\pi \lambda}|f'(z)|^2)^2} \) of (0.1.3) with parameter \( \lambda \in \mathbb{R} \).
5. The “zero points” \( p_1, \ldots, p_n \in E \) of \( f \) satisfy the following \( n \) equations:

\[ (0.6.1) \sum_{i=1}^n \psi^r(p_i; \Lambda) \cdot \varphi^r(p_i; \Lambda) = 0, \quad r = 0, \ldots, n-2, \]

\[ (0.6.2) \sum_{i=1}^n \frac{\partial G}{\partial z}(p_i) = 0, \]

where \( G(z) \) is the Green’s function of \( E \).
(6) The meromorphic function $g := \frac{d}{dz} \log f = f'/f$ on $E$ is even and is determined by the points $[p_1], \ldots, [p_n] \in E$, while the normalized developing map $f$ is determined up to $\mathbb{C}^\times$ by $[p_1], \ldots, [p_n]$, via the following formulas:

\begin{equation}
(0.6.3) \quad g(z) = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{\varphi'(p_i; \Lambda)}{\varphi(z; \Lambda) - \varphi(p_i; \Lambda)}, \quad f(z) = f(0) \cdot \exp \int_{0}^{z} g(\xi) d\xi.
\end{equation}

Conversely, if $\{[p_1], \ldots, [p_n]\}$ is a set of $n$ distinct points of $E \setminus \{0\}$ which satisfies equations (0.6.1) and (0.6.2), and

\begin{equation}
(0.6.4) \quad \{[p_1], \ldots, [p_n]\} \cap \{[-p_1], \ldots, [-p_n]\} = \emptyset,
\end{equation}

then the function $f$ defined by (0.6.3) is a type II normalized developing map of a solution of the Liouville equation (0.1.3) with $\rho = 8\pi n$.

Theorem 0.6 will be proved in §5. While the type I system is purely algebraic, the type II system is somewhat transcendental as it involves the Green function of $E$. It is natural to isolate the Green equation $\sum \nabla G(p_i) = 0$ and consider the remaining $n - 1$ algebraic equations (0.6.1) first.

**0.6.1.** Let $a = \{a_1, \ldots, a_n\}$ be an unordered set of complex numbers with distinct images in $E \setminus \{0\} = (\mathbb{C} \setminus \Lambda)/\Lambda$ such that the equation (0.6.1) is satisfied with $p_i = a_i$ for $i = 1, \ldots, n$. Let $x = \varphi(z; \Lambda), y = \varphi'(z; \Lambda)$, so that the torus $E$ is given by the Weierstrass equation

\[ y^2 = 4x^3 - g_2(\Lambda)x - g_3(\Lambda). \]

Let $(x_i, y_i) = (\varphi(a_i; \Lambda), \varphi'(a_i; \Lambda))$ for $i = 1, \ldots, n$. Then the system of $n - 1$ equations (0.6.1) takes the algebraic form

\begin{equation}
(0.6.5) \quad \sum_{i=1}^{n} x_i^r \cdot y_i = 0, \quad i = 0, 1, \ldots, n - 2.
\end{equation}

Recalled that the algebraic variety $Y_n$ is defined by the system of equations (0.5.4).

**Theorem 0.6.2** (= Theorem 5.8.3). For any set of distinct complex numbers $x_1, \ldots, x_n$, the two systems of linear equations in variables $y_1, \ldots, y_n$ (0.6.5) and (0.5.4) are equivalent.

Define $X_n \subset \text{Sym}^n E$ by

\begin{equation}
(0.6.6) \quad X_n = \left\{ \{x_i, y_i\}_{i=1}^{n} \mid (x_i, y_i) \in E \setminus E[2] \quad \forall \ i, \ x_i \neq x_j \ \forall \ i \neq j, \ \sum_{i=1}^{n} x_i^r \cdot y_i = 0 \ \text{for} \ r = 0, 1, \ldots, n - 2 \right\},
\end{equation}

where $E[2] = \frac{1}{2} \Lambda / \Lambda$ is the subset of 2-torsion points of $E$. This variety $X_n$ is an affine algebraic curve, which will be called the $(n$-th) Liouville curve. Theorem 0.6.2 implies that

\[ X_n = \{ \{a_i\}_{i=1}^{n} \in Y_n \mid \varphi(a_i) \neq \varphi(a_j) \ \text{whenever} \ i \neq j, \ \varphi'(a_i) \neq 0 \ \forall \ i \}. \]
The following theorem says that the Liouville curve $X_n$ is the unramified locus of the Lamé curve $\bar{X}_n$ for the hyperelliptic projection.

**Theorem 0.7 (Hyperelliptic structure on $X_n \subset Y_n \subset \bar{X}_n$).**

1. Let $a = \{[a_i]\}_{i=1}^n$ be a point of $Y_n$. The corresponding $B$ in the Lamé equation, in the sense of the Hermite-Halphen ansatz recalled in 0.5.1, is given by
   \[ B_a = (2n - 1) \sum_{i=1}^n \wp(a_i). \]

2. The map $\pi : Y_n \to \mathbb{C}$ defined by $a \mapsto B_a$ is a proper surjective branched double cover.

3. The map $\pi : Y_n \to \mathbb{C}$ has a natural extension to a proper morphism
   \[ \bar{\pi} : \bar{X}_n \to \mathbb{P}^1 = \mathbb{C} \cup \{\infty\}, \]
   where $\bar{X}_n$ is the closure of $X_n$ in $\text{Sym}^n E$, for both the Zariski and the complex topologies.

4. The restriction $\pi|_{X_n} : X_n \to \pi(X_n) = U$ of $\pi$ to the Zariski open subset $X_n \subset Y_n$ is a finite étale double cover of the Zariski open subset $U \subset \mathbb{C}$. Points of the finite set $\bar{X}_n \setminus X_n$ are precisely the ramification points of $\bar{\pi}$.

5. The curve $\bar{X}_n$ is (possibly singular) hyperelliptic curve of arithmetic genus $n$ and $\bar{\pi}$ is the hyperelliptic structural morphism. Moreover $\bar{X}_n = Y_n \cup \{0^n\}$ is the union of $Y_n$ with a single point $\{0^n\} := \{0, \ldots, 0\} \in \text{Sym}^n E$.

6. The curve $\bar{X}_n$ is stable under the involution $i$ of $\text{Sym}^n E$, defined by
   \[ i : \{P_1, \ldots, P_n\} \mapsto \{-P_1, \ldots, -P_n\} \quad \forall P_1, \ldots, P_n \in E. \]
   The restriction $i$ of $i$ to $X_n$ is the hyperelliptic involution on $X_n$. The set of ramification points $\bar{X}_n \setminus X_n$ of $\bar{\pi}$ coincides with the fixed point set of the hyperelliptic involution $i$ on $\bar{X}_n$.

7. The map $\pi$ induces a bijection from the finite set $Y_n \setminus X_n$ to the finite set $\mathbb{C} \setminus U$. A point $\{[a_i]\}_{i=1}^n$ of $Y_n$ lies in $Y_n \setminus X_n$ if and only if the function $w_a$ as defined in 0.5.1 is a Lamé function. Hence $\#(Y_n \setminus X_n) = 2n + 1$ when $Y_n \setminus X_n$ is counted with multiplicities inherited from $\mathbb{C} \setminus U$ when $\mathbb{C} \setminus U$ is identified with the set of roots of the polynomial $\ell_n(B) = 0$ of degree $2n + 1$ in Theorem B.

8. The inverse image of the point $\infty = \mathbb{P}^1 \setminus \mathbb{C}$ under $\bar{\pi}$ consists of a single point $0^n = (0, \ldots, 0) \in E^n$. This point $0^n$ “at infinity” is a smooth point of $\bar{X}_n$ for every torus $E$. 


0.7.1. A complete proof of Theorem 0.7 is given in §7, after some preparation in §6 on characterizations of $Y_n$ and $X_n$ related to the Lamé equations. In particular, the affine hyperelliptic curve $Y_n$ is defined by the explicit equation

$$C^2 = \ell_n(B; g_2, g_3) \quad \text{with} \quad \deg \ell_n = 2n + 1.$$ 

This curve, called the $n$-th Lamé curve, is smooth for generic tori. It is an irreducible algebraic curve since the degree of $\ell_n$ is odd. Due to its fundamental importance, we offer several proofs, from both the analytic and the algebraic perspectives, for (part of) the theorem. We must mention that the polynomial $\ell_n(B)$ in Theorem B had been treated in the literature in several different contexts, including the investigation of Lamé equations with algebraic solutions [3, 16] and the mathematical physics related to Lamé equations. Thus a substantial portion of Theorem 0.7 overlaps with existing literature. However there are a number of issues for which we were unable to locate satisfactory treatment in the literature. For instance why the closure $\bar{X}_n$ of $Y_n$ in $\text{Sym}^n E$ coincides with the (projectivized) hyperelliptic model of $Y_n$ at infinity, instead of the closure of $Y_n$ in $\mathbb{P}^2$. In this paper we attempt to provide a self-contained account of the hyperelliptic structure of $\bar{X}_n$, from both the analytic and the algebraic point of view, for the convenience of the readers. The readers will find in our treatment the precise behavior of the local structure near every $a \in \bar{X}_n \setminus X_n$, including the infinity point, and the quantitative meaning of the parameter $C$ in the Lamé curve in various contexts (c.f. Theorem 7.4 and Remark 7.4.2, as well as formulas (5.6.4), (7.1.2), (7.1.4) and (7.4.1)).

0.7.2. A necessary and sufficient condition for a point $\{p_1, \ldots, p_n\}$ of $Y_n$ to be attached to a type II solution $u$ of the mean field equation (0.1.3) with parameter $\rho = 8\pi n$ is the Green equation (0.6.2) according to Theorem 0.6. This case when $n = 1$, where $\bar{X}_1 = E$, was treated in [34] by combining two techniques. The first technique is to use the double cover $E \to \mathbb{P}^1 \cong S^2$ and the evenness of $u$ to transform the equation to another one on $S^2$ (with more singular sources). To extend this step to a general positive integer $n$, we believe that the hyperelliptic geometry on $\bar{X}_n$ is the right replacement of $E$.

It will be shown in Part II of this series of articles that the map

$$\mu : \bar{X}_n \to E, \quad \{p_1, \ldots, p_n\} \mapsto \mu(\{p_1, \ldots, p_n\}) = \sum p_i$$

is a branched covering of degree $\frac{1}{2}n(n + 1)$, and the rational function

$$z(a) := \zeta(\sum a_i) - \sum \zeta(a_i) \quad a = \{a_1, \ldots, a_n\}$$

on $\bar{X}_n$ is a primitive generator of the extension field $K(\bar{X}_n)$ over $K(E)$. Using this, a “pre-modular form” $Z_n(\mu; \tau)$ for $\tau \in \mathbb{H}$ and $\mu \in E$, will be constructed, which has the property that non-trivial solutions to the Green
equation (0.6.2) on \( \bar{X}_n \) correspond exactly to the zeros of the single function \( Z_n(\mu; \tau) \).

0.7.3. The second technique employed for the case \( \rho = 8\pi \) is to use the method of continuity to connect the equation for \( \rho = 8\pi \) to the known case when \( \rho = 4\pi \) by establishing the non-degeneracy of the linearized equations of (0.1.3). For general \( \rho \), such a non-degeneracy statement is out of reach at this moment. However, since equation (0.1.3) has a solutions \( u_\eta \) for every \( \rho = 8\pi \eta \not\in 8\pi \mathbb{N} \), it is natural to study the limiting behavior of \( u_\eta \) as \( \eta \to n \). If the limit does not blow up, it will converge to a solution \( u \) for \( \rho = 8\pi n \). For the blow-up case, we will establish a connection between the location of the blow-up set and the hyperelliptic geometry of \( Y_n \rightarrow \mathbb{P}^1 \):

Theorems 0.7.4. Let \( S = \{ p_1, \ldots, p_n \} \) be an element of \( \text{Sym}^n(E_n) \) such that \( p_i \neq p_j \) whenever \( i \neq j \). Suppose that \( S \) is the blow-up set of a sequence of solutions \( u_k \) of the Louiville equation (0.1.3) with parameter \( \rho_k \) such that \( \rho_k \to 8\pi n \) as \( k \to \infty \). Then \( S \in Y_n \). Moreover,

1. If \( \rho_k \neq 8\pi n \) for every \( k \) then \( S \) is a branch (or ramification) point of \( Y_n \).
2. If \( \rho_k = 8\pi n \) for all \( k \) then \( S \) is not a branch point of \( Y_n \).

The proof of Theorem 0.7.4 is given in §8. Theorems 0.7.4 and 0.7 give rather precise information on the blow-up set, which we believe will play a fundamental role in future research on the mean field equations.

1. Liouville equations with singular source

1.1. A Theorem of Liouville.

1.1.1. We begin with a quick review of a classical theorem of Liouville.

Proposition 1.1.2. Every \( \mathbb{R} \)-valued \( C^2 \) solution \( u \) of the differential equation

\[
\Delta u + e^u = 0
\]

in a simply connected domain \( D \subset \mathbb{C} \) can be expressed in the form

\[
u = \log \frac{8|f'|^2}{(1 + |f|^2)^2}
\]

where \( f \) is a holomorphic function on \( D \) whose derivative \( f' \) does not vanish on \( D \). Conversely for every meromorphic function \( f \) on an open subset \( V \subset \mathbb{C} \) with at most simple poles whose derivative does not vanish on \( V \), the function \( \log \frac{8|f'|^2}{(1 + |f|^2)^2} \) is a smooth function which satisfies equation (1.1.2).

A proof of Liouville’s theorem 1.1.2 is given in 1.1.8 for the convenience of the readers.

Definition 1.1.3. Let \( u \) be a real-valued \( C^2 \)-function on a domain \( D \subset \mathbb{C} \) and satisfies equation (1.1.1) on \( D \) A meromorphic function \( f \) on a (not
necessarily connected) covering space \( \pi : \tilde{D} \to D \) of \( D \) is a developing map of \( u \) if
\[
(1.1.3) \quad u(z) = \log \frac{8|f'(z)|^2}{(1 + |f(\tilde{z})|^2)^2} \quad \text{for every } z \in D \text{ and every } \tilde{z} \in \tilde{D} \text{ above } z.
\]
For any pole \( \tilde{z}_0 \in \tilde{D} \) of \( f \), the equality (1.1.3) for \( z = z_0 \) means that the right hand side of (1.1.3) has a finite limit as \( z \to \tilde{z}_0 \), and this limit is equal to \( u(\pi(\tilde{z}_0)) \).

**Remark 1.1.4.** (a) It is easy to see that every developing map \( f : \tilde{D} \to \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \) of a \( C^2 \) solution \( u \) of (1.1.1) on \( D \) has no critical point on \( \tilde{D} \). In other words the holomorphic map \( f : \tilde{D} \to \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \) is étale. More explicitly this means that the derivative \( f' \) of the meromorphic function \( f \) does not vanish at every point where \( f \) is holomorphic, and \( f \) has at most simple poles.

(b) The proof of Liouville’s theorem 1.1.2 in 1.1.8 provides another interpretation of developing maps: a developing map \( f \) for a solution \( u \) of (1.1.1) is an orientation-preserving local isometry, from a covering space of \( D \) with the Riemannian metric \( \frac{1}{2} e^u (dx^2 + dy^2) \), to \( \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \) with the Fubini-Study metric (or equivalently the unit sphere \( S^2 \) with the standard metric) which has constant Gaussian curvature 1.

Developing maps are not unique. In Lemma 1.1.5 below we show that different developing maps of a solution \( u \) are related by special unitary Möbius transformations.

**Lemma 1.1.5.** Let \( u \) be a \( C^2 \) solution of equation (1.1.1) on a domain \( D \subset \mathbb{C} \). Let \( f \) be a developing map for \( u \) on a covering space \( \tilde{D} \) of \( D \) as in as in definition 1.1.3.

1. The solution \( u \) of (1.1.1) and its developing map \( f \) are related by\(^{13}\)
\[
(1.1.4) \quad u_{zz} - \frac{1}{2} u_z^2 = \frac{f'''}{f'} - \frac{3}{2} \left( \frac{f''}{f'} \right)^2.
\]

2. Let \( U \) be an element of \( PSU(2) \) represented by a \( 2 \times 2 \) special unitary matrix \( \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \) with \( a, b, c, d \in \mathbb{C} \). The function \( Uf := \frac{af+b}{cf+d} \) is also a developing map of \( u \) on \( \tilde{D} \).

3. Assume that the covering space \( \tilde{D} \) of \( D \) is connected. Suppose that \( \tilde{f} \) is another developing of \( u \) on \( \tilde{D} \). There exists an element \( T \in PSU(2) \) such that \( \tilde{f} = Tf \).

**Proof.** The statements (1) and (2) are easily verified by direction calculation. It remains to prove (3). Notice first that the Schwarzian derivatives of \( f \) and \( \tilde{f} \) are equal by (1).

\(^{13}\)The right hand side of equation (1.1.4) is the Schwarzian derivative \( S(f) \) of \( f \); the equality here means that the Schwarzian derivative of \( f \) descends to the function \( u_{zz} - \frac{1}{2} u_z^2 \) on \( D \).
We recall a properties of Schwarzian derivatives of non-constant meromorphic mappings

Hence there exists a Möbius transformation $T$, say represented by an element $\begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in \text{SL}(2; \mathbb{C})$, such that $\tilde{f} = Tf = \frac{af + b}{cf + d}$. \footnote{Here we have used the assumption that $D$ is connected and a basic property of Schwarzian derivatives: if $S(g_1) = S(g_2)$ for two locally non-constant meromorphic functions $g_1$ and $g_2$, then $g_1$ and $g_2$ differ by a Möbius transformation. This is consequence of the special case that $S(g) = 0$ if and only if $g$ is a linear fractional transformation and the cocycle property of Schwarzian derivatives: $S(g \circ h)(z) = S(g)(h(z)) \cdot h'(z)^2 + S(h)(z)$.}

$$\log \left( \frac{8|f'|^2}{(1 + |f|^2)^2} \right) = \log \left( \frac{8|(Tf)'|^2}{(1 + |Tf|^2)^2} \right),$$

we deduce that $|af + b|^2 + |cf + d|^2 = 1 + |f|^2$ on $\bar{D}$. Hence the quality

$$|az + b|^2 + |cz + d|^2 = 1 + |z|^2$$

holds on $\mathbb{C}$ because meromorphic maps are open. Applying $\partial \bar{\partial} \log$ to both sides of the last displayed equality, we see that the Möbius transformation $T$ preserves the Fubini-Study metric on $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$, or equivalently the spherical metric on the 2-sphere $S^2$. So $T$ is an element of $\text{PSU}(2)$, because $\text{PSU}(2)$ is the group of all orientation preserving isometries of $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$. \qed

**Remark 1.1.6.** In the notation of Lemma 1.1.5, let $V$ be an element of $\text{SU}(2)$ such that $VUV^{-1} = \begin{pmatrix} e^{i\theta} & 0 \\ 0 & e^{-i\theta} \end{pmatrix}$ for some $\theta \in \mathbb{R}$. Then the two developing maps $V\tilde{f}$ and $Vf$ of $u$ are related by

$$V\tilde{f} = e^{2i\theta}Vf.$$

**1.1.7.** Lemmas 1.1.5 can be reformulated as follows. See also 1.1.8.

Let $u$ be a $C^2$ solution of equation (1.1.1) on a domain $D \subset \mathbb{C}$. There exists a (not necessarily connected) covering space $\pi_\mathcal{U} : \mathcal{D}_\mathcal{U,univ} \to D$, a left action of $\text{PSU}(2)$ on $\mathcal{D}_\mathcal{U}$, and a meromorphic function $f_{\mathcal{U,univ}} : \mathcal{D}_\mathcal{U,univ} \to \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ on $\mathcal{D}_\mathcal{U,univ}$ satisfying the following properties.

(a) $\pi : \mathcal{D}_\mathcal{U,univ} \to D$ is a left principle homogeneous space for $\text{PSU}(2)$.

(b) $f_{\mathcal{U,univ}}$ is a developing map for $u$.

(c) For any open subset $U \subset D$ and any developing map $f$ for $u|_U$ on a covering space $\pi : \hat{U} \to U$ of $U$, there exists a unique holomorphic map $g : \hat{U} \to \mathcal{D}_\mathcal{U,univ}$ such that $f(\hat{z}) = f_{\mathcal{U,univ}}(g(\hat{z}))$ for all $\hat{z} \in \hat{U}$.

**1.1.8.** A proof of Proposition 1.1.2. From the perspective of differential geometry equation (1.1.1) is simply the prescribed Gaussian curvature equation for the metric

$$g = \frac{1}{2} e^{u} (dx^2 + dy^2)$$
on the domain $D$ to have Gaussian curvature $K_g = 1$. Given that $u$ is a solution of the equation (1.1.1), a simple calculation shows that

\[(1.1.5) \quad K_g = -e^{-u} \Delta u = 1.\]

So at any given point $z_1 \in D$, there exists a meromorphic function $f_1(z)$ on a neighborhood of $V(z_1)$ of $z_1$ such that $u(z) = \log \left( \frac{8|f_1(z)|^2}{(1+|f_1(z)|^2)^2} \right)$ for all $z \in V(z_1)$, because the Fubini-Study metric on $\mathbb{C} = \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \setminus \{\infty\}$ is $\frac{4 \, dx \, dy}{(1+|z|^2)^2}$.

The collection of germs of all such local developing maps $f_1$ form a locally constant sheaf $\text{Dev}(u)$ over $D$ with monodromy group $\text{PSU}(2)$ according to Lemma 1.1.5. Note that $\text{Dev}(u)$ is the locally constant sheaf attached to the covering space $D_{u,\text{univ}}$ in 1.1.7. The locally constant sheaf $\text{Dev}(u)$ has a global section $g$ because the domain $D$ is simply connected. This global section $g$ is a developing map of $u$ on $D$. The holomorphic map $\tilde{g}$ from $D$ to $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ defined by the meromorphic function $g$ is étale as we have remarked in 1.1.4 (b), hence the image $\tilde{g}$ misses some point $Q$ of $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$. Pick an element $U \in \text{PSU}(2)$ which sends $Q$ to $\infty$. Then $f := Ug$ is holomorphic function on $U$ which is also a developing map of $u$. \hfill \square

### 1.2. Liouville theory on tori with isolated singular data.

It is a challenge to extend the Liouville theory recalled in the previous section to oriented Riemann surfaces and with singular source. In this paper we will consider the genus one case, so the Riemann surface will be a flat torus $E$. Moreover we put just one singular source on $E$, and we will make this singular source the additive unity 0 for a holomorphic group law on $E$.

#### 1.2.1.

We choose and fix a non-zero global holomorphic one-form $\beta$ on $E$, so that integrating $\beta$ along paths starting from 0 gives an isomorphism $\int_0^1 \beta : E \to \mathbb{C}/\Lambda$ for a lattice $\Lambda \subset \mathbb{C}$, so that $\beta$ is the pull-back of the one-form $dz = dx + \sqrt{-1}dy$ descended to $\mathbb{C}/\Lambda$. The flat torus $E$ will be identified with $\mathbb{C}/\Lambda$ in the rest of this paper. Let $\omega_1, \omega_2$ be a $\mathbb{Z}$-basis of $\Lambda$ such that $\tau := \omega_2/\omega_1$ satisfies $\text{Im}(\tau) > 0$. Let $\omega_3 := -\omega_1 - \omega_2$, so that $\omega_1 + \omega_2 + \omega_3 = 0$.

We will consider the mean field equation

\[(1.2.1) \quad \Delta u + e^u = \rho \cdot \delta_0, \quad \rho \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}\]

on $E = \mathbb{C}/\Lambda$, where $\Delta = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial \bar{z} \partial z} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial y^2}$, $\delta_0$ is the Dirac measure at 0 and we have identified $L^1$-functions with (signed) measures using the Lebesgue measure $dx \, dy$ on $\mathbb{C}/\Lambda$, so the equation (1.2.1) means that

$$\int_E (u \cdot \Delta h + e^u \cdot h) \, dx \, dy = \rho \cdot h(0)$$

for every smooth function $h$ on $E$. The corresponding geometric problem is the equation

$$K_g = -e^{-u} \Delta u = 1 - \rho e^{-u} \delta_0$$
for the Gaussian curvature $K_g$ of the metric $g = \frac{1}{2} e^u (dx^2 + dy^2)$ on $E$, which has a highly non-classical character.

We will be mostly interested in the case when the parameter $\rho$ of the equation (1.2.1) is an integer multiple of $4\pi$. This integrality condition on $\rho$ implies that every developing map of a solution of (1.2.1) is meromorphic locally on $E$ (and not just on $E \smallsetminus \{0\}$).

**Lemma 1.2.2.** Let $u$ be a solution of (1.2.1) on $E$, where the parameter $\rho = 4\pi l$ for a positive integer $l$. Let $f_1$ be a developing map of the restriction to $E \smallsetminus \{0\}$ of $u$, so that $f_1$ is a holomorphic function on a universal covering $U$ of $E \smallsetminus \{0\}$ whose derivative does not vanish on $U$. Then $f_1$ extends to a meromorphic function on a covering space of $E$ in the following sense: There exists a covering space $\gamma : \tilde{E} \to E$ of $E$ such that the following statements hold.

(a) The holomorphic function $f_1$ on $U$ descends to a function $f_2$ on the covering space $\gamma^{-1}(E \smallsetminus \{0\})$ of $E \smallsetminus \{0\}$

(b) The holomorphic function $f_2$ on the open subset $\gamma^{-1}(E \smallsetminus \{0\})$ of $\tilde{E}$ extends to a meromorphic function on $\tilde{E}$.

Equivalently, $f_2$ defines a holomorphic map from $\tilde{E}$ to $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$.

**Proof.** This statement is local at $0 \in E$. A proof can be found in [14, 35, 46], based on the following inequality. For a punctured disk $\Delta^\varepsilon$ with a small radius $\varepsilon$ we have

$$\int_{\Delta^\varepsilon^\varepsilon} e^u \, dA = \frac{\int_{\Delta^\varepsilon^\varepsilon} 8|f'|^2}{(1 + |f|^2)^2} \, dA,$$

where the right hand side is the spherical area under the inverse stereographic projections covered by $f(\Delta^\varepsilon^\varepsilon)$.

Alternatively, from the well-known formula

$$\Box \log(\sqrt{x^2 + y^2}) = 2\pi \cdot \delta_{(0,0)}$$

on $\mathbb{R}^2$, one sees that every holomorphic map from a neighborhood $V$ of $0 \in E$ to $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$ with multiplicity $l + 1$ at $0$ is a developing map of a solution of (1.2.1) in $V$. Since any two local developing maps of any local solution of (1.2.1) differ by an element of $\text{PSU}(2)$, we conclude that every developing map of every solution of (1.2.1) in a neighborhood of $0 \in E$ “is” a meromorphic function in a neighborhood of $0 \in E$. \qed

**Remark 1.2.3.** As an immediate consequence of the fact that $\Box \log(|z|) = 2\pi \cdot \delta_0$, one sees that if a meromorphic function $f$ on an open neighborhood $U$ of $0 \in \mathbb{C}$ such that the locally $L^1$ function $u = \log \frac{8|f'|^2}{(1 + |f|^2)^2}$ satisfies $\Box u + e^u = \rho \cdot \delta_0$ on $U$ for some real number $\rho$, then $\rho = 4\pi \cdot l$, where $l + 1 \in \mathbb{N}_{>0}$ is the multiplicity of $f$ at $0$. So the parameter $\rho$ in the equation (1.2.1) must be in $4\pi \cdot \mathbb{N}_{>0}$ if a developing map of a solution $u$ is a meromorphic function on $\mathbb{C}$. Note also that the equation (1.2.1) has no solution when
Lemma 1.2.6. Let $f$ be a meromorphic function on the universal covering
of the elliptic curve, while the other two terms do not.

1. There exists a meromorphic function $f$ on the universal covering $C$ of $E$ which is a developing map of $u$. Let $\tilde{f} : C \to \mathbb{P}^1(C)$ be the holomorphic map corresponding to the meromorphic function $f$ on $C$.
2. For every $T \in PSU(2)$, the meromorphic function $T f$ is also a developing map of $u$. Moreover every developing map of $u$ is equal to $T f$ for some element $T \in PSU(2)$.
3. Suppose that $z_0$ is an element of the lattice $\Lambda$. The holomorphic map $\tilde{f} : C \to \mathbb{P}^1(C)$ has multiplicity $l + 1$ at $z_0$. In other words either $f$ is holomorphic at $z_0$ and $f'$ has a zero of order $l$ at $z_0$, or $f$ has a pole of order $l + 1$ at $z_0$.
4. The holomorphic map $\tilde{f} : C \to \mathbb{P}^1(C)$ has no critical point outside $\Lambda$. In other words if $z_1 \in C \setminus \Lambda$, then either $f$ is holomorphic at $z_1$ and $f'(z_1) \neq 0$, or $f$ has a simple pole at $z_1$.

Proof. The statement (1) is a corollary of Lemma 1.2.2. The statement (2) is a consequence of the interpretation of developing maps as local isometries from the conformal metric $\frac{1}{2} e^u dz \bar{dz}$ to the Fubini-Study metric $\frac{4dz \bar{dz}}{(1+|z|^2)^2}$ and the fact that $PSU(2)$ is the group of all orientation preserving isometries of $\mathbb{P}^2(C)$ with the Fubini-Study metric; c.f. 1.1.8. The statement (3) is a consequence of the last paragraph of the proof of Lemma 1.2.2. The statement (4) follows from 1.1.4 (a).

Remark 1.2.5. We discuss how to relate solutions of (1.2.1) on $C/\Lambda$ and $C/(t \cdot \Lambda)$ for $t \in \mathbb{C}^\times$. Suppose that $u(z; \Lambda)$ is a solution of the singular Liouville equation (1.2.1) on $C/\Lambda$ and $f(z; \Lambda)$ is a developing map on $C$ for $u(z; \Lambda)$. It is easy to check that $u(w; t \Lambda) := u(t^{-1}w; \Lambda) − \log(t)l$ is a solution of (1.2.1) on the elliptic curve $C/t\Lambda$ whose universal covering is the complex plane $C_w$ with coordinate $w = tz$. Moreover $f(t^{-1}w; \Lambda)$ is a developing map for the solution $u(w; t\Lambda)$ on $C_w$.

Of course the above “gauge transformation rules” reflects the fact that the three terms of equation (1.2.1) scale differently when the coordinate of $C$ changes from $z$ to $w = tz$ for a non-zero constant $t$: the equation (1.2.1) is better written as
\[
2\sqrt{-1} \partial \bar{\partial} u + \sqrt{-1} e^u dz \wedge d\bar{z} = \rho \cdot \delta_0,
\]
where the last term $\delta_0$ is the $\delta$-measure at $[0] \in C/\Lambda$. The second term $\sqrt{-1} e^u dz \wedge d\bar{z}$ in the above equation depends on the choice of a global holomorphic 1-form on the elliptic curve, while the other two terms do not.

Lemma 1.2.6. Let $f$ be a meromorphic function on the universal covering $C$ of $E = C/\Lambda$. This function $f$ is a developing map of a solution $u$ of (1.2.1) with parameter $\rho = 4\pi l \in 4\pi \mathbb{N}_{>0}$ if and only if the following conditions hold.

\[\rho = 0, \text{ for otherwise the elliptic curve has a metric with constant Gaussian curvature 1, contradicting the Gauss-Bonnet theorem.}\]
Lemma 1.2.6, there exist on a developing map $f$:

1. Monodromy constraints.

1. Let $u$ be a solution of the equation (1.2.1) on $E$, where the parameter $\rho \in 4\pi \cdot \mathbb{N}_{\geq 0}$. Let $f$ be a meromorphic function on $C$ which is a developing map of $u$.

1. The monodromy representation $\rho_f$ of the fundamental group $\Lambda$ of $E$ attached to the developing map $f$ is the group homomorphism $\rho_f : \Lambda \rightarrow \text{PSU}(2)$ such that

$$f(z + \omega) = (\rho(\omega)f)(z) \quad \forall \omega \in \Lambda, \forall z \in C.$$

2. The monodromy of the solution $u$ of equation (1.2.1) is the PSU(2)-conjugacy class of the homomorphism $\rho_f : \Lambda \rightarrow \text{PSU}(2)$, which depends only on $u$ and not on the choice of developing map $f$.

1.3. Monodromy constraints. Next we review the monodromy constraints on a developing map $f$ of a solution of (1.2.1) on $E$, resulting from the fact that the fundamental group of $E$ is a free abelian group of rank two. By Lemma 1.2.6, there exist $T_1 = \rho_f(\omega_1), T_2 = \rho_f(\omega_2) \in \text{PSU}(2)$ with the following properties:

$$f(z + \omega_1) = T_1 f,$$

$$f(z + \omega_2) = T_2 f.$$

In addition $T_1 T_2 = T_2 T_1$ in $\text{PSU}(2)$ because the source of the monodromy representation $\rho_f : \pi_1(E) \rightarrow \text{PSU}(2)$ is commutative.

Lemma 1.3.1. Let $\Gamma$ be a commutative subgroup of $\text{PSU}(2)$.

1. Suppose that $\Gamma$ is isomorphic to the Klein-four group $(\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z})^2$.

1a) $\Gamma$ is conjugate to $\Gamma_0$, where $\Gamma_0$ is the image in $\text{PSU}(2)$ of

$$\left\{ \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} \sqrt{-1} & 0 \\ 0 & -\sqrt{-1} \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \sqrt{-1} \\ \sqrt{-1} & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right\}.$$

1b) The centralizer subgroup of $\Gamma$ in $\text{PSU}(2)$ is equal to $\Gamma$.

1c) The centralizer subgroup of $\Gamma$ in $\text{PSL}(2,\mathbb{C})$ is also equal to $\Gamma$.

1d) The normalizer subgroup $N_{\text{PSU}(2)}(\Gamma)$ is isomorphic to the symmetric group $S_4$. In other words $N_{\text{PSU}(2)}(\Gamma)/\Gamma$ is a semi-direct product of $\Gamma$, and the conjugation action of $N_{\text{PSU}(2)}(\Gamma)$ on $\Gamma$ induces an isomorphism

$$N_{\text{PSU}(2)}(\Gamma)/\Gamma \overset{\sim}{\rightarrow} \text{Aut}_{\Gamma}(\Gamma) \cong \text{Perm}(\Gamma \setminus \{\text{Id}\}).$$
where \( \text{Perm}(\Gamma \setminus \{0\}) \) is the set of all permutations of the set \( \Gamma \setminus \{\text{Id}\} \).

(1e) The subset \( \{ x \in \text{PSL}(2, \mathbb{C}) \mid x \cdot \Gamma \cdot x^{-1} \subset \text{PSU}(2) \} \) of \( \text{PSL}(2, \mathbb{C}) \) is equal to \( \text{PSU}(2) \).

(2) If \( \Gamma \) is not isomorphic to \((\mathbb{Z} / 2\mathbb{Z})^2\), then \( \Gamma \) is contained in a maximal torus of \( \text{PSU}(2) \); i.e. there exists an element \( T_0 \in \text{PSU}(2) \) such that \( T_0 \cdot \Gamma \cdot T_0^{-1} \) is contained in the image in \( \text{PSU}(2) \) the diagonal maximal torus

\[
\left\{ \left( \begin{array}{cc} e^{\sqrt{-1} \theta} & 0 \\
0 & e^{-\sqrt{-1} \theta} \end{array} \right) : \theta \in \mathbb{R}/\pi \mathbb{Z} \right\} \subset \text{SU}(2)
\]

Proof. The spectral theorem tells us that every element of \( \text{U}(2) \) is conjugate in \( \text{U}(2) \) to a diagonal matrix. Using this it is easy to verify the following assertion, whose proof is omitted here.

Suppose that \( u \) is a non-trivial element of \( \text{PSU}(2) \).

- If \( u^2 \neq 1 \) in \( \text{PSU}(2) \), then the centralizer \( \text{Z}_{\text{PSU}(2)}(u) \) of \( u \) is a maximal torus in \( \text{PSU}(2) \), i.e. a conjugate of the image of the diagonal maximal torus

\[
\left\{ \left( \begin{array}{cc} e^{\sqrt{-1} \theta} & 0 \\
0 & e^{-\sqrt{-1} \theta} \end{array} \right) : \theta \in \mathbb{R}/\pi \mathbb{Z} \right\}
\]

- If \( u \) is an element of order two in \( \text{PSU}(2) \), then the centralizer subgroup \( \text{Z}_{\text{PSU}(2)}(u) \) of \( u \) in \( \text{PSU}(2) \) is a semi-direct product of a maximal torus of \( \text{PSU}(2) \) with a group of order two, equal to the normalizer of a maximal torus. Moreover \( \text{Z}_{\text{PSU}(2)}(u) \) contains a unique subgroup which is isomorphic to \((\mathbb{Z} / 2\mathbb{Z})^2\).

The statement (2) follows, so do (1a), (1b) and (1c).

To prove (1d), by (1a) and (1b) it suffices to show that the normalizer subgroup \( \text{N}_{\text{PSU}(2)}(\Gamma_0) \) on \( \Gamma_0 \) contains a subgroup \( S \) of order 6 which intersect \( \Gamma \) trivially. Let \( \delta \) be the image of \( \left( \begin{array}{cc} 0 & -e^{-\pi \sqrt{-1}/4} \\
e^{-\pi \sqrt{-1}/4} & 0 \end{array} \right) \) in \( \text{PSU}(2) \) and let \( \gamma \) be the image of \( \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \left( \begin{array}{cc} -1 & 1 \\ -1 & -1 \end{array} \right) \) in \( \text{PSU}(2) \). It is straight forward to check that \( \delta \) has order 2 and induces a transposition on \( \Gamma \setminus \{\text{Id}\} \), \( \gamma \) has order 3 and \( \delta \cdot \gamma \cdot \delta^{-1} = \gamma^{-1} \). It follows that \( \text{N}_{\text{PSU}(2)}(\Gamma_0) \) is a semi-direct product of \( \Gamma_0 \rtimes S_3 \), so \( \text{N}_{\text{PSU}(2)}(\Gamma_0) \) is isomorphic to \( S_4 \). We have proved (1d). Alternatively, it is well known that \( \text{PSU}_2 \) contains a finite subgroup isomorphic to \( S_4 \). The statement (1d) follows from this fact, (1a) and (1b).

Finally the statement (1e) follows from (1a), (1d) and (1c): Suppose that \( x \in \text{PSL}(2, \mathbb{C}) \) and \( \text{Ad}(x)(\Gamma_0) = x \cdot \Gamma_0 \cdot x^{-1} \subset \text{PSU}(2) \). By (1a) and (1d), there exists \( y \in \text{PSU}(2) \) such that \( y \cdot x \) commutes with every element of \( \Gamma_0 \). By (1c) \( y \cdot x \in \Gamma_0 \), hence \( x \in y^{-1} \cdot \Gamma_0 \subset \text{PSU}(2) \). \( \square \)
Remark. The group \( N_{\text{PSU}(2)}(\Gamma) \) is also isomorphic to \( \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z}/4\mathbb{Z})/\{\pm I_2\} \), the quotient of \( \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z}) \) by the subgroup generated by the principal congruence subgroup of level 4 and \( \{\pm I_2\} \).

**Corollary 1.3.2.** Let \( \rho : \Lambda \to \text{PSU}(2) \) be a group homomorphism.

(i) If the image of \( \rho \) is isomorphic to \( (\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z})^2 \), then \( \rho \) is conjugate to the homomorphism which sends \( \omega_1 \) to the image of \( \begin{pmatrix} \sqrt{-1} & 0 \\ 0 & -\sqrt{-1} \end{pmatrix} \) and \( \omega_2 \) to the image of \( \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \sqrt{-1} \\ \sqrt{-1} & 0 \end{pmatrix} \).

(ii) If the image of \( \rho \) is not isomorphic to \( (\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z})^2 \), then there exists real numbers \( \theta_1, \theta_2 \) such that \( \rho \) is conjugate to the homomorphism which sends \( \omega_i \) to \( \begin{pmatrix} e^{\sqrt{-1}\theta_i} & 0 \\ 0 & e^{-\sqrt{-1}\theta_i} \end{pmatrix} \) for \( i = 1, 2 \).

Lemma 1.3.3 below follows from Corollary 1.3.2 and Lemma 1.2.4 (1), (2).

**Lemma 1.3.3.** Let \( u \) be solution of equation (1.2.1) where the parameter \( \rho > 0 \) is an integer multiple of \( 4\pi \).

**Type I.** If the image in \( \text{PSU}(2) \) of the monodromy of \( u \) is isomorphic to \( (\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z})^2 \), then there exists a developing map \( f \) of \( u \) such that

\[
\begin{align*}
 f(z + \omega_1) &= -f(z) \quad \forall z, \\
f(z + \omega_2) &= \frac{1}{f(z)} \quad \forall z.
\end{align*}
\]

Moreover the set \( \{f, -f, f^{-1}, -f^{-1}\} \) is uniquely determined by the solution \( u \).

**Type II.** Suppose that the image in \( \text{PSU}(2) \) of the monodromy of \( u \) is not isomorphic to \( (\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z})^2 \). There exists a developing map \( f \) of \( u \) and two real numbers \( \theta_1, \theta_2 \) such that

\[
\begin{align*}
 f(z + \omega_1) &= e^{2i\theta_1} f(z) \quad \forall z, \\
f(z + \omega_2) &= e^{2i\theta_2} f(z) \quad \forall z.
\end{align*}
\]

If moreover \( \{\theta_1, \theta_2\} \nsubseteq \frac{1}{2}\mathbb{Z} \), then the set \( C_1^\times \cdot f \cup C_1^\times \cdot f^{-1} \) is uniquely determined by \( u \), where \( C_1^\times := \{w \in C : |w| = 1\} \).

**Definition 1.3.4.** (a) Let \( f \) be a solution of equation (1.2.1) where the parameter \( \rho > 0 \) is an integer multiple of \( 4\pi \). If the image of the monodromy representation \( \rho_f \) of \( f \) is isomorphic to \( (\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z})^2 \), then say that \( f \) is of type I; otherwise we say that \( f \) is of type II.

(b) A developing map \( f \) which satisfies equation (1.3.2) (respectively (1.3.3)) will be said to be normalized of type I (respectively type II).

**Lemma 1.3.5.** Let \( f \) be a developing map of a solution of a solution \( u \) of equation (1.2.1) where the parameter \( \rho > 0 \) is an integer multiple of \( 4\pi \).
(1) If $f$ is of type I and $T \in \text{PGL}(2, \mathbb{C})$ is a linear fractional transformation such that $T \cdot f$ is again a developing map of a solution of equation (1.2.1) with the same parameter $\rho$, then $T \in \text{PSU}(2)$ and $Tf$ is a developing map of the same solution $u$ of (1.2.1).

(2) Suppose that $f$ is of type II. There exists a closed subgroup $A$ of $\text{PGL}(2, \mathbb{C})$, conjugate to the image in $\text{PGL}(2, \mathbb{C})$ of the diagonal non-compact real torus $A_0 := \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} : a \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \right\}$, such that the following statements hold.

(2a) $T \cdot f$ is a developing map of a solution $u_T f$ of equation (1.2.1) with the same parameter $\rho$.

(2b) $u_{T_1 f} \neq u_{T_2 f}$ for any two distinct elements $T_1, T_2$ in $A$.

Proof. The statement (1) follows from Lemma 1.2.6 and Lemma 1.3.1 (1e). To show (2), we may assume that $f$ is normalized of type II and take $A$ to be the image in $\text{PGL}(2, \mathbb{C})$ of $A_0$. Then the statement (2a) follows from Lemma 1.2.6. The statement (2b) follows from Lemma 1.1.5 (3) because the only element of $A$ which is conjugate in $\text{PGL}(2, \mathbb{C})$ to an element in $\text{PSU}(2)$ is the unity element of $A$. □

1.3.6. Logarithmic derivatives of normalized developing maps. In this article we approach the mean field equations (1.2.1) with $\rho = 4\pi l$, $l \in \mathbb{N}_{>0}$ through the logarithmic derivative $g := (\log f)' = \frac{f'}{f}$ of a normalized developing map $f$ of a solution of (1.2.1). Recall that such developing maps are meromorphic functions $f$ on $\mathbb{C}$ satisfying 1.2.6 (1) and either of equations (1.3.2), (1.3.3).

Lemma 1.3.7. Suppose that $f$ is a normalized developing map of a solution of (1.2.1), and $l := \rho / 4\pi$ is a positive integer. Let $g := \frac{f'}{f}$ be the logarithmic derivative of $f$.

(1) The developing map $f$ on $\mathbb{C}$ is holomorphic and non-zero at every point of $\Lambda$; i.e. $f(\Lambda) \subset \mathbb{P}^1 \setminus \{0, \infty\}$.

(2) The meromorphic function $g$ on $\mathbb{C}$ has a zero of order $l$ at every point of $\Lambda$, no zeros and at most simple poles on $\mathbb{C} \setminus \Lambda$.

(3) If $f$ is of type II, then $g$ descends to a meromorphic function on $E = \mathbb{C} / \Lambda$.

(4) If $f$ is of type I, then $g$ descends to a meromorphic function on the double cover $E' = \mathbb{C} / \Lambda'$, where $\Lambda' = \mathbb{Z} \cdot \omega_1 + \mathbb{Z} \cdot 2\omega_2$.

Proof. The statements (3) and (4) are immediate from the equations (1.3.2) and (1.3.3) for normalized developing maps.

Clearly $g$ has at most simple poles on $\mathbb{C}$. Lemma 1.2.4 (4) implies that $g$ has no zeros on $\mathbb{C} \setminus \Lambda$. For any point $z_0 \in \Lambda$, if $f$ has either a zero or a pole at $z_0$, then $g$ will have a simple pole at every point of $\Lambda$, and the meromorphic
function \( g \) on \( E' = \mathbb{C}/\Lambda' \) defined by \( g \) will have no zero but at least one pole, a contradiction. Therefore \( f \) has values in \( \mathbb{C}^\times \) in a neighborhood of \( z_0 \); we have proved the statement (1). Lemma 1.2.4 (3) then implies that \( g \) has a zero of order \( l \) at every point of \( \Lambda \). We have proved statement (2). \( \square \)

1.4. Type I solutions. In this subsection we will show that the existence of solution of (1.2.1) such that the image of the monodromy representation is \((\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z})^2\) implies that the parameter \( l = \rho/4\pi \) is an odd positive integer.

1.4.1. Notation for type I.

- Let \( \omega_1' = \omega_1, \omega_2' = 2\omega_2 \) and let \( \Lambda' := \mathbb{Z} \cdot \omega_1' + \mathbb{Z} \cdot \omega_2' \).
- Let \( \wp(z) = \wp(z; \Lambda') \) be the Weierstrass \( \wp \)-function for the lattice \( \Lambda' \subset \mathbb{C} \).
- Let \( \zeta(z) = \zeta(z; \Lambda') = -\int^{z} \wp(u)du = z^{-1} + \cdots \) be the Weierstrass \( \zeta \)-function and let \( \sigma(z) = \sigma(z; \Lambda') = \exp \int^{z} \zeta(u)du = z + \cdots \) be the Weierstrass \( \sigma \)-functions for \( \Lambda' \subset \mathbb{C} \).
- Let \( g \) be the logarithmic derivative of the normalized developing map \( f \) of a type I solution \( u \) of (1.2.1). Let \( \bar{g} \) be the function on \( E' \) defined by \( g \).

The standard references for elliptic functions are [54, Ch. 20], [1, Ch. 7] and [30, Ch. 18 §1]; we have followed the notation in [1, Ch. 7]:\(^{15}\)

- \( \omega_1', \omega_2' \) form a \( \mathbb{Z} \)-basis of the lattice \( \Lambda' \) with \( \text{Im}(\omega_2'/\omega_1') > 0 \). Note that the latter condition means that \((\omega_1', \omega_2)\) is an oriented basis of the for the standard orientation of the complex plane.
- \( \eta_i = \eta(\omega_i'; \Lambda') \) for \( i = 1, 2 \), where \( \omega \mapsto \eta(\omega; \Lambda') \) is the \( \mathbb{Z} \)-linear function from \( \Lambda' \) to \( \mathbb{C} \) such that

\[
\zeta(z + \omega; \Lambda') = \zeta(z) + \eta(\omega; \Lambda') \quad \forall z \in \mathbb{C}, \forall \omega \in \Lambda.
\]

- The classical Legendre relation

\[
\eta_1 \cdot \omega_2 - \eta_2 \cdot \omega_1 = 2\pi \sqrt{-1}
\]

means that

\[
\eta(\alpha)\beta - \eta(\beta)\alpha = \psi(\alpha, \beta) \quad \forall \alpha, \beta \in \Lambda',
\]

where \( \psi : \Lambda' \times \Lambda' \to \mathbb{Z} \) is the alternating pairing on \( \Lambda' \) which sends an oriented \( \mathbb{Z} \)-basis \((\omega_1, \omega_2)\) of \( \Lambda \) to 1.

\(^{15}\)The notation in [30] is the same as in [1] except that \( \text{Im}(\omega_1'/\omega_2) > 0 \). The notation in [54] is: \( 2\omega_1', 2\omega_2' \) form a \( \mathbb{Z} \)-basis of \( \Lambda' \) with \( \text{Im}(\omega_2'/\omega_1) > 0 \), and \( \zeta(z + 2\omega_i'; \Lambda') = \zeta(z) + 2\eta_i(\Lambda') \) for \( i = 1, 2 \).
1.4.2. Recall that the type I condition implies that

\begin{align}
\theta(z + \omega_1) &= \theta(z) \quad \forall z, \\
\theta(z + \omega_2) &= -\theta(z) \quad \forall z.
\end{align}

(1.4.1)

According to Lemma 1.3.7, the meromorphic function $\theta$ on $E'$ has zeros of order $l$ at the two points of $\Lambda'/\Lambda'$, no zeros and at most simple poles elsewhere on $E'$.

From 1.3.7 (1), the principal divisor $(\theta)$ of the meromorphic function $\theta$ on $E'$ has the form

$$ (\theta) = \ell \cdot 0_{E'} + \ell \cdot [\omega_2]_{E'} - \sum_{P \in \theta^{-1}(\infty)} P, $$

where $[\omega_2]_{E'} = \omega_2 \mod \Lambda'$ is the image of $\omega_2$ in $E'$, and $\sum_{P \in \theta^{-1}(\infty)} P$ is the polar divisor $(\theta)_\infty$ of $\theta$, an effective divisor of degree $2\ell$ which is a sum of $2\ell$ distinct points of $E'$. Clearly the sum of the polar divisor under the group law of $E'$ is equal to $\ell$ times the 2-torsion point $[\omega_2]_{E'}$. We know from the condition $\theta(z + \omega_2) = -\theta(z)$ that the polar divisor $(\theta)$ of $\theta$ is stable under the translation by the 2-torsion point $[\omega_2]_{E'}$. Let $P_1, \ldots, P_l$ be a set of representatives of the quotient of $\theta^{-1}(\infty)$ under the translation action by $[\omega_2]_{E'}$. The sum $\mu_e(P_1, \ldots, P_l) = P_1 +_{E'} \cdots +_{E'} P_l$ of this set of representatives under the group law of $E'$ is a 2-torsion point because the sum of the polar divisor $(\theta)_\infty$ is $[2]_{E'}([\omega_2]_{E'})$. Moreover it is clear that the image of $\mu_e(P_1, \ldots, P_l)$ in the quotient group $E'[2]/\{0_{E'}, [\omega_2]_{E'}\}$ is independent of the choice of representatives $P_1, \ldots, P_l$. The following lemma says that this image is equal to the non-trivial element of $E'[2]/\{0_{E'}, [\omega_2]_{E'}\}$.

**Lemma 1.4.3.** Notation as above. The sum $P_1 +_{E'} \cdots +_{E'} P_l$ in $E'$ of any set of representatives of the quotient $\theta^{-1}(\infty)/\{0_{E'}, [\omega_2]_{E'}\}$ is congruent to the non-zero 2-torsion point $\omega_2$ mod $\Lambda'$ modulo the subgroup $\{0_{E'}, [\omega_2]_{E'}\}$ of the group $E'[2]$ of all 2-torsion points of $E'$.

1.4.4. Lemma 1.4.3 is a consequence of a more precise statement Lemma 1.4.5; the latter uses Weierstrass $\sigma$-function. The $\sigma$-function is essentially the odd theta function $\theta_{11}(z)$ with half-integer characteristics, up to rescaling of the $z$-variable, a harmless factor $-\pi \cdot e^{-\eta z^2/2}$ and the product

$$ \theta_{00}(0) \cdot \theta_{01}(0) \cdot \theta_{10}(0) $$

of three even theta constants. We recall some of the basic properties of the $\sigma$-function below.

(i) The function

$$ \sigma(z) = \sigma(z; \Lambda') = z \cdot \prod_{\omega \in \Lambda' \setminus \{0\}} \left(1 - \frac{z}{\omega}\right) \cdot \exp\left(\frac{z}{\omega} + \frac{z^2}{2\omega^2}\right) $$

is an entire odd function on $\mathbb{C}$, with simples zeros on points of $\Lambda'$ and non-zero elsewhere. In addition $\xi(z)$ satisfies the following
transformation law for translation by elements of $\Lambda'$.

\[(1.4.2) \quad \sigma(z + \alpha) = e(\alpha) \cdot e'(\alpha)(z + \frac{\alpha}{2}) \cdot \sigma(z) \quad \forall z \in \mathbb{C}, \forall \alpha \in \Lambda',\]

where $e : \Lambda' \rightarrow \{\pm 1\}$ is the quadratic character on $\Lambda'$ given by

\[e(\alpha) = \begin{cases} 
1 & \text{if } \alpha \in 2\Lambda \\
-1 & \text{if } \alpha \not\in 2\Lambda'.
\end{cases}\]

(ii) Suppose that $m$ is a positive integer and $a_1, \ldots, a_m; b_1, \ldots, b_m$ are elements of $\mathbb{C}$. The meromorphic function

\[h(z; a_1, \ldots, a_m; b_1, \ldots, b_m) := \frac{\prod_{i=1}^{m} \sigma(z - a_i)}{\prod_{i=1}^{m} \sigma(z - b_i)}\]

on $\mathbb{C}$ is $\Lambda'$-periodic if and only if $\sum_{i=1}^{m} a_i = \sum_{i=1}^{m} b_i$. Moreover if $\sum_{i=1}^{m} a_i = \sum_{i=1}^{m} b_i$, then the principle divisor of the meromorphic function on $E' = \mathbb{C}/\Lambda'$ defined by $\prod_{i=1}^{m} \sigma(z - a_i)/\prod_{i=1}^{m} \sigma(z - b_i)$ is

\[\sum_{i=1}^{m} [a_i]_{E'} - \sum_{i=1}^{m} [b_i]_{E'},\]

where $[a_i]_{E'}$ (respectively $[b_i]_{E'}$) is the image of $a_i$ (respectively $b_i$) in $E'$ for $i = 1, \ldots, m$.

(iii) Suppose that $(a_1, \ldots, a_m; b_1, \ldots, b_m)$ and $(a'_1, \ldots, a'_m; b'_1, \ldots, b'_m)$ are two $2m$-tuples of complex numbers such that $\sum_{i=1}^{m} a_i = \sum_{i=1}^{m} b_i$, $\sum_{i=1}^{m} a'_i = \sum_{i=1}^{m} b'_i$, $a'_i \equiv a_i \pmod{\Lambda'}$ and $b'_i \equiv b_i \pmod{\Lambda'}$ for $i = 1, \ldots, m$. Then

\[\frac{\prod_{i=1}^{m} \sigma(z - a_i)}{\prod_{i=1}^{m} \sigma(z - b_i)} = \frac{\prod_{i=1}^{m} \sigma(z - a'_i)}{\prod_{i=1}^{m} \sigma(z - b'_i)}\]

(iv) Let $h$ be a non-constant meromorphic function on $E'$. Let

\[a_1, \ldots, a_m; b_1, \ldots, b_m\]

be elements of $\mathbb{C}$ such that the principle divisor of $h$ is equal to $\sum_{i=1}^{m} [a_i]_{E'} - \sum_{i=1}^{m} [b_i]_{E'}$. Then there exists a constant $A \in \mathbb{C}^*$ such that

\[h([z]_{E'}) = A \cdot \frac{\prod_{i=1}^{m} \sigma(z - a_i)}{\prod_{i=1}^{m} \sigma(z - b_i)} \quad \forall z \in \mathbb{C}.
\]

Note that (ii) and (iii) are consequences of the transformation law (1.4.2) in (i), and (iv) follows from (ii).

**Lemma 1.4.5.** [35] Let $l$ be a positive integer. Let $p_1, \ldots, p_l; q_1, \ldots, q_l$ be elements in $\mathbb{C} \setminus \Lambda$ satisfying

\[(1.4.3) \quad \sum p_i + \sum q_i = l\omega_2\]

and $p_i + \omega_2 \equiv q_i \pmod{\Lambda'}$ for $i = 1, \ldots, l$. Let

\[(1.4.4) \quad h(z) = \frac{\sigma^l(z)\sigma^l(z - \omega_2)}{\prod_{i=1}^{l} \sigma(z - p_i)\prod_{i=1}^{l} \sigma(z - q_i)}\]
be the meromorphic function on \( \mathbb{C} \) attached to the 4l-tuple 
\[
(0, \ldots, 0, \omega_2, \ldots, \omega_2; p_1, \ldots, p_l, q_1, \ldots, q_l)
\]
as in 1.4.4 (ii). Note that \( h(z) \) descends to a meromorphic function on \( E' \) whose principle divisor is
\[
1 \cdot 0_{E'} + 1 \cdot [\omega_2]_{E'} - \sum_{i=1}^{l} [p_i]_{E'} - \sum_{i=1}^{l} [q_i]_{E'}
\]
according to 1.4.4 (ii).

(a) The function \( h(z) \) satisfies \( h(z + \omega_2) = -h(z) \) for all \( z \in \mathbb{C} \) if and only if
\[
\sum_{i=1}^{l} p_i \equiv \frac{1}{2} \omega_1 \pmod{\Lambda}.
\]
Note that the above displayed formula means that \( \sum_{i=1}^{l} p_i \) is congruent to either \( \frac{1}{2} \omega_1 \) or \( \frac{1}{2} \omega_1 + \omega_2 \) modulo \( \Lambda' \).

(b) Suppose that \( p_1 + \cdots + p_l \equiv \frac{1}{2} \omega_1 + \omega_2 \pmod{\Lambda'} \). There exist elements \( p'_1, \ldots, p'_l; q'_1, \ldots, q'_l \) in \( \mathbb{C} \) satisfying the following conditions.

(b1) \( p'_i \equiv p_i \pmod{\Lambda'} \) and \( q'_i \equiv q_i \pmod{\Lambda'} \) for \( i = 1, \ldots, l \),
(b2) \( \sum_{i=1}^{l} p'_i = \frac{1}{2} \omega_1 \),
(b3) \( q'_i = p'_i + \omega_2 \) for \( i = 1, \ldots, l - 1 \) and \( q'_l = p'_l + \omega_2 - \omega_1 \),
(b4) \( h(z) = \frac{\sigma^l(z) \sigma^l(z - 2) \prod_{i=1}^{l} (z - p'_i) \prod_{i=1}^{l} (z - q'_i)}{\sigma(1) \sigma^l(z - \omega_2) \prod_{i=1}^{l} \sigma(z - p'_i) \prod_{i=1}^{l} \sigma(z - q'_i)} \).

(c) Suppose that \( p_1 + \cdots + p_l \equiv \frac{1}{2} \omega_1 + \omega_2 \pmod{\Lambda'} \). There exist elements \( p'_1, \ldots, p'_l; q'_1, \ldots, q'_l \) in \( \mathbb{C} \) satisfying the following conditions.

(c1) \( p'_i \equiv p_i \pmod{\Lambda'} \) and \( q'_i \equiv q_i \pmod{\Lambda'} \) for \( i = 1, \ldots, l \),
(c2) \( \sum_{i=1}^{l} p'_i = \frac{1}{2} \omega_1 + \omega_2 \),
(c3) \( q'_i = p'_i + \omega_2 \) for \( i = 1, \ldots, l - 1 \), and \( q'_l = p'_l - \omega_2 - \omega_1 \),
(c4) \( h(z) = \frac{\sigma^l(z) \sigma^l(z - \omega_2) \prod_{i=1}^{l} \sigma(z - p'_i) \prod_{i=1}^{l} \sigma(z - q'_i)}{\prod_{i=1}^{l} \prod_{i=1}^{l} \sigma(z - p'_i) \sigma(z - q'_i)} \).

Proof. Clearly (b1) and (b3) implies that
\[
\sum_{i=1}^{m} p'_i + \sum_{i=1}^{m} q'_i = 1 \cdot \omega_2 = \sum_{i=1}^{m} p'_i + \sum_{i=1}^{m} q'_i,
\]
therefore (b4) follows from (b1)–(b3). By 1.4.4 (iii). Similarly (c1)–(c3) implies (c4).

Because \( p_i + \omega_2 \equiv 0 \pmod{\Lambda'} \) for each \( i \), the condition (1.4.3) implies that \( \sum_{i=1}^{l} p_i \equiv m \cdot \omega_1 + n \cdot \omega_2 \) for integers \( m, n \in \{0, 1\} \). By 1.4.4 (iii). Let
\[
\begin{align*}
p'_1 &= p_1, \ldots, p'_{i-1} = p_{i-1}, p'_i = p_i, \\
q'_1 &= p_1 + \omega_2, \ldots, q'_{i-1} = p_{i-1} + \omega_2 \text{ and} \\
q'_i &= p_i - m \omega_1 + (1 - 2n) \omega_2.
\end{align*}
\]
By 1.4.4(iii) the equality \( h(z) = \frac{\sigma^l(z)\sigma^l(z - \omega_2)}{\prod_{i=1}^l \sigma(z - p_i^l) \prod_{i=1}^l \sigma(z - q_i^l)} \) holds. All that remains is to use the transformation law (1.4.2) to see whether \( h(z + \omega_2) = -h(z) \).

There are only four possibilities for the pair \((m, n)\), namely
\[
(m, n) = \begin{cases} (i) (0, 0), & (ii) (1, 0), \ (iii) (0,1), \ (iv) (1, 1). \end{cases}
\]

One verifies by direction calculations that \( h(z + \omega_2) = h(z) \) for all \( z \) if \( m = 0 \), while \( h(z + \omega_2) = -h(z) \) for all \( z \) if \( m = 1 \). For instance when \((m, n) = (0,0), h(z + \omega_2) \) and \( h(z) \) differ by the factor of automorphy
\[
\frac{(-1)^l \exp(l\eta_2 z)}{(-1)^l \exp \left[ \eta_2 \sum_{i=1}^l (z - p_i) \right]} = 1,
\]
Meaning that \( h(z + \omega_2) = h(z) \). When \((m, n) = (1,0), h(z + \omega_2) \) and \( h(z) \) differ by the factor
\[
\frac{(-1)^{l-(l+1)} \exp(l\eta_2 z)}{\exp \left[ \eta_2 \sum_{i=1}^{l-1} (z - p_i) + (\eta_2 - \eta_1)(z - p_1 - \frac{1}{2}\omega_1) + \eta_1(z - p_1 - \frac{1}{2}\omega_1) \right]}
\]
which is \(-1\) since \( \sum p_i = \frac{1}{2}\omega_1 \). The other two cases are checked similarly. We have proved lemmas 1.4.5 and 1.4.3.

1.4.6. In order to construct type I solutions from the elliptic function \( g \), we need to find all the other constraints imposed on its poles.

Let \( p_1, \ldots, p_l \) be points of \( \mathbb{C} \) such that \( \bigcup_{i=1}^l p_i + \Lambda' \) are the simple zeroes of the developing map \( f \) and \( \bigcup_{i=1}^l p_i + \omega_2 + \Lambda' \) are the simple poles of \( f \). Let \( P_i := p_i \bmod \Lambda' \) and let \( Q_i := p_i + \omega_2 \bmod \Lambda' \) for \( i = 1, \ldots, l \). We know that
\[
P_1, \ldots, P_l, Q_1, \ldots, Q_l
\]
are \( 2l \) distinct points of \( (\mathbb{C} \setminus \Lambda) / \Lambda' = E' \setminus \{0_{E'}, [\omega_2]_{E'}\} \); equivalently
\[
p_i - p_j \not\equiv \Lambda \quad \forall i \neq j, \ 1 \leq i, j \leq l.
\]
We also know that
\[
\sum_{i=1}^l p_i \equiv \frac{\omega_1}{2} \pmod{\Lambda}
\]
according to Lemma 1.4.3. By 1.4.4(iv) we know that there exists a constant \( A \in \mathbb{C}^\times \) such that
\[
g(z) = A \cdot \frac{\sigma^l(z)\cdot \sigma^l(z - \omega_2)}{\prod_{i=1}^l \sigma(z - p_i) \cdot \prod_{i=1}^l \sigma(z - q_i)}
\]
where \( q_1, \ldots, q_l \) are elements of \( \mathbb{C} \) such that
\[
q_i \equiv p_i + \omega_2 \pmod{\Lambda'} \quad \forall i, \quad \text{and} \quad \sum_{i=1}^l p_i + \sum_{i=1}^l q_i = l\omega_2.
\]
Proposition 1.4.8. Let $h$ be an elliptic function on $E'$ defined by (1.4.6), with $p_1, \ldots, p_l$ fixed, and also independent of the choice of $p_1, \ldots, p_{j-1}, p_{j+1}, \ldots, p_l$ in their respective congruence classes modulo $\Lambda'$ when the $q_j$'s and $p_1 + \cdots + p_{j-1} + p_{j+1} + \cdots + p_l$ are fixed. One checks by a routine calculation that the right hand side of the formula (1.4.7) remains the same when $p_j$ is replaced by $p_j + \alpha$ and $q_j$ is replaced by $\alpha$ for any element $\alpha \in \Lambda'$. So the right hand side of the formula (1.4.6) is a meromorphic function of $(p_1, \ldots, p_l) \in E' \times \cdots \times E'$.

Lemma 1.4.7. Let $p_1, \ldots, p_l$ be elements of $\mathbb{C}$ such that $\bigcup_{i=1}^l p_i + \Lambda$ are the zeroes of the developing map $f$ and $\bigcup_{j=1}^l p_j + \omega_2 + \Lambda$ are the poles of $f$. Let $q_1, \ldots, q_l$ be elements of $\mathbb{C}$ satisfying the conditions in (1.4.6). Then

\begin{equation}
(1.4.8) \quad r_1 = r_2 = \cdots = r_l.
\end{equation}

where the non-zero complex numbers $r_1, \ldots, r_l$ are defined by (1.4.7) and the elements $q_1, \ldots, q_l \in \mathbb{C}$ appearing in the formula (1.4.7) satisfies the conditions in (1.4.6).

Proof. Write $g = f'/f$ as in (1.4.5) for a suitable constant $A \in \mathbb{C}^\times$. Then $Ar_j = 1$ for $j = 1, \ldots, l$, hence $r_1 = r_2 = \cdots = r_l$. \qed

Proposition 1.4.8. Let $p_1, \ldots, p_l$ be elements of $\mathbb{C}$ with the following properties.

(i) $\sum_{i=1}^l p_i = \omega_1/2$ (mod $\Lambda$),
(ii) $p_i - p_j \not\equiv 0$ (mod $\Lambda$) whenever $i \neq j$, and
(iii) the residue equalities (1.4.8) hold, where $r_1, \ldots, r_l$ are defined by (1.4.7) and the elements $q_1, \ldots, q_l \in \mathbb{C}$ satisfy the conditions in (1.4.6).

Let $h$ be an elliptic function on $E'$ defined by (1.4.4). Let $A := r_1^{-1}$ and let $g_1 := A \cdot h$.

(a) $s_1 = \cdots = s_l = -r_1 = \cdots = -r_l$, where

\begin{equation}
(1.4.9) \quad s_j = \frac{\sigma^l(q_j) \cdot \sigma^l(q_j - \omega_2)}{\prod_{i=1}^l \sigma(q_j - p_i) \cdot \prod_{i=1, i \neq j}^l \sigma(q_j - q_i)} \quad \text{for} \quad j = 1, \ldots, l.
\end{equation}

Consequently the residue of the simple pole $P_i$ (respectively $Q_i$) of the meromorphic function $A \cdot h$ on $E'$ is equal to 1 (respectively $-1$). Here $P_i := p_i \mod \Lambda' \in E'$ and $Q_i := q_i \mod \Lambda' \in E'$ for $i = 1, \ldots, l$.

(b) If $h$ is an odd function, then the following statements hold.

(b1) The subset $\{P_1, \ldots, P_l\} \subset E' \setminus \{0_{E'}, [\omega_2]_{E}'\}$ is stable under the involution of $E'$ induced by “multiplication by $-1$”.

(b2) Exactly one of $P_1, \ldots, P_l$ is a two-torsion point of $E'$; this point is either $\frac{\omega_1}{2} \pm \omega_2 \mod \Lambda'$ or $\frac{\omega_1}{2} + \omega_2 \mod \Lambda'$.
(b3) \( l \) is an odd integer.

(c) Conversely suppose that the condition (b1) is satisfied, or equivalently conditions all (b1)–(b3) hold. Then \( h \) is an odd function; i.e. \( h(-z) = -h(z) \) for all \( z \in \mathbb{C} \).

(d) Assume \( h \) is an odd function, or equivalently that conditions (b1)–(b3) hold.

(d1) There exists a normalized type I developing map \( f_1 \) of a solution of (1.2.1) with parameter \( \rho = 4\pi l \) such that \( \frac{f_1}{\rho} = g_1 \).

(d2) \( f_1 \) and \( -f_1 \) are the only normalized type I developing map whose logarithmic derivative is \( g_1 \).

(d3) \( f_1 \) is an even function, i.e. \( f_1(-z) = f_1(z) \) for all \( z \in \mathbb{C} \).

Proof. We know that \( h(z + \omega_2) = -h(z) \) for all \( z \in \mathbb{C} \) by Lemma 1.4.5 (a). So the statement (a) follows from the assumption that \( r_1 = \cdots = r_l \).

The set \( \{P_1, \ldots, P_l\} \) is the set of all (simple) poles with residue \( r_1 \) of the meromorphic differential \( hdz \) on \( E' \). The assumption that \( h \) is odd means that \( hdz \) is invariant under “multiplication by \(-1\)”, so the statement (b1) follows. The statement (b2) follows because of assumption (i). The statement (b3) follows from (a) and (b2).

Suppose that (b1)–(b3) hold. Let \( n = (2l - 1)/2 \). After renumbering the \( p_i \)'s we may assume that \( P_{n+1} = -P_1, P_{n+2} = -P_2, \ldots, P_{2n} = -P_n \) and \( P_l = [\omega_2]_{E'} \). According to 1.4.4 (iii), we have

\[
h(z) = \frac{\sigma^{2n+1}(z) \cdot \sigma^{n+1}(z - \omega_2) \cdot \sigma^n(z + \omega_2)}{[\prod_{i=1}^n \sigma(z - p_i) \cdot \sigma(z + p_i)] \cdot [\prod_{i=1}^{n+1} \sigma(z - p_i - \omega_2) \cdot \sigma(z + p_i + \omega_2)] \cdot \sigma(z - \frac{n\pi}{2}) \cdot \sigma(z + \frac{n\pi}{2} - \omega_2)}
\]

Using the fact that \( \sigma(z) \) is an odd function, we get

\[
\frac{h(-z)}{h(z)} = \frac{\sigma(z + \omega_2) \cdot \sigma(z - \frac{n\pi}{2}) \cdot \sigma(z + \frac{n\pi}{2} - \omega_2)}{\sigma(z - \omega_2) \cdot \sigma(z + \frac{n\pi}{2}) \cdot \sigma(z - \frac{n\pi}{2} + \omega_2)} = (-1) \cdot e^{\eta_2 \cdot z} \cdot e^{\eta_1 \cdot z} \cdot e^{(\eta_1 - \eta_2) \cdot z} = -1
\]

by the transformation law for the \( \sigma \)-function. We have proved statement (c).

Assume again that (b1)–(b3) hold, so that \( l = 2n + 1 \) is odd and \( h(z) \) is an odd function. Then \( g_1(z) \) is an odd meromorphic function on \( E' \) which has simple poles with residue 1 at \( P_1, \ldots, P_{2n+1} \) and has simple poles with residue \(-1\) at \( Q_1, \ldots, Q_{2n+1} \). From the proof of 1.4.8 (d) may and so assume that \( p_i = p_{n+i} \) for \( i = 1, \ldots, n \), and \( p_n = \frac{n\pi}{2}, q_n = \frac{n\pi}{2} + \omega_2 \), so that \( h(z) \) is given by equation (1.4.10). For each of the \( 4n + 2 \) poles of \( g_1(z)dz \), the integral along a sufficiently small circle around the pole is \( \pm 2\pi \). Hence the line integral \( \int_{C}^{z} g_1(w)dw \) is a well-defined as an element of \( \mathbb{C}/2\pi\mathbb{Z} \) and the function

\[
f_2(z) = e^{\int_{C}^{z} g_1(w)dw}
\]
is a well-defined meromorphic function on \( \mathbb{C} \) with simple poles at points in the union \( \bigcup_{i=1}^{2n+1} q_i + \Lambda' \) of \( \Lambda' \)-cosets, simple zeros at points in \( \bigcup_{i=1}^{2n+1} p_i + \Lambda' \), neither zero nor pole elsewhere on \( \mathbb{C} \). In particular \( f_2(z) \) is holomorphic and non-zero at points of \( \Lambda \). Notice that \( f_2(z) = f_1(-z) \) for all \( z \in \mathbb{C} \) because \( g_1 \) is odd.

The fact that \( g_1(w)dw \) is invariant under translation by \( \omega_1 \) implies that
\[
f_2(z + \omega_1) = \int_{0}^{\omega_1} g_1(w)dw \cdot f_1(z) \quad \forall z \in \mathbb{C}.
\]
Similarly the fact that \( g_1(w + \omega_2) = -g_1(w) \) implies that
\[
f_2(z + \omega_2) \cdot f_2(z) = \int_{0}^{\omega_2} g_1(w)dw.
\]
To prove (d) it suffice to show that
\[
(1.4.11) \quad \int_{0}^{\omega_1} g_1(w)dw \equiv \pi \sqrt{-1} \pmod{2\pi \sqrt{-1} \mathbb{Z}},
\]
for then \( f_1(z) = \sqrt{f_2(\omega_2)^{-1}} \cdot f_2(z) \) will be a normalized developing map of type I (for a solution of equation (1.2.1) with \( \rho = 2n + 1 \)), for either of the two square roots of \( f_2(\omega_2)^{-1} \). Clearly these are the only two normalized developing maps of type I whose logarithmic derivatives are equal to \( g_1 \).

To compute the integral \( \int_{0}^{\omega_1} g_1(w)dw \) modulo \( 2\pi \sqrt{-1} \mathbb{Z} \), let \( C_\epsilon \) be the path from 0 to \( \omega_2 \), obtained from the oriented line segment 0\( \omega_2 \) from 0 to \( \omega_2 \) near by replacing the \( \epsilon \)-neighborhood of each pole of \( g_1(w)dw \) by the half circle of radius \( \epsilon \) to the right of 0\( \omega_2 \), for all sufficiently small \( \epsilon > 0 \). Clearly the integral \( \int_{C_\epsilon} g_1(w)dw \) is independent of \( \epsilon \). Write \( C_\epsilon \) the union of the small half circles and the “straight part” \( C'_\epsilon \) of \( C_\epsilon \). Let \( m_1 \) (respectively \( m_2 \)) be the number of poles of \( g_1 \) with residue 1 (respectively \(-1\)) on the line segment 0\( \omega_2 \).

The fact that \( g_1(w)dw \) is invariant under multiplication by \(-1\) implies that the integral of \( g_1(w) \) over \( C'_\epsilon \) is 0, so \( \int_{0}^{\omega_1} g_1(w)dw \) converges to \( (m_1 - m_2) \cdot \pi \sqrt{-1} \) as \( \epsilon \to 0^+ \). In other words
\[
\int_{C'_\epsilon} g_1(w)dw = (m_1 - m_2) \cdot \pi \sqrt{-1}
\]
for all (sufficiently small) \( \epsilon > 0 \). On the other hand the assumptions (b1) and (b2) tells us that \( m_1 - m_2 \) is an odd integer. We have proved the statements (d1)–(d3).

\[\square\]

1.5. Type II scaling families and blow-up points. In type II, it follows from (1.3.3) that \( g = f'/f \) is an elliptic function on \( E \). From §1.2, \( g \) has zero only at \( z = 0 \). Thus by Lemma 1.2.4,
\[
(1.5.1) \quad g(z) = A \frac{\sigma'(z)}{\prod_{i=1}^{l} \sigma(z - p_i)}
\]
for \( p_i \)'s being simple zeros/poles of \( f \) with \( \sum p_i = 0 \). Now the Weierstrass function \( \sigma \) is with respect to \( E \). Also the points \( p_i \)'s are unique up to elements in \( \Lambda \) as long as the constraint \( \sum p_i = 0 \) is satisfied.

**Proposition 1.6.** For \( \rho = 4\pi l \) with \( l \) being odd, there are no type II, i.e. blow-up, solutions to the mean field equation

\[
\triangle u + e^u = \rho \delta_0 \quad \text{on } E.
\]

**Proof.** If there is a solution \( u \) with developing map \( f \), then \( g = f' / f \) is elliptic on \( E \) with residues at \( p_i \), \( i = 1, \ldots, l \), being \( \pm 1 \). Since \( l \) is odd, the sum of residues of \( g \) is non-zero, which contradicts to the classical fact that the sum of residues of an elliptic function must be zero. \( \square \)

Therefore we may set \( l = 2n \). Let \( p_1, \ldots, p_n \) be zeros and \( p_{n+1}, \ldots, p_{2n} \) be poles of \( f \). The residue of \( g \) at \( z = p_j \) is given by

(1.6.1) \[
r_j = \frac{\sigma^l(p_j)}{\prod_{i=1, i\neq j}^l \sigma(p_j - p_i)}.
\]

Then we have equations

(1.6.2) \[
r_1 = \cdots = r_n = -r_{n+1} = \cdots = -r_{2n}.
\]

Recall that

\[
f(z) = f(0) \exp \int_0^z g(w) \, dw.
\]

**Lemma 1.7.** In order for \( f \) to verify (1.3.3), it is equivalent to require that the periods integrals are purely imaginary:

\[
\int_{L_i} \! g(z) \, dz \in i\mathbb{R}, \quad i = 1, 2.
\]

Another characteristic feature for type II is that any solution must exist in an one parameter scaling family of solutions. To see this, notice that if \( f \) is a developing map of solution \( u \) then \( e^\lambda f \) also satisfies (1.3.3) for any \( \lambda \in \mathbb{R} \). In fact \( e^\lambda f \) is a developing map of \( u_\lambda \) defined by (0.2.4):

\[
u_\lambda(z) = \log \frac{8e^{2\lambda}|f'(z)|^2}{(1 + e^{2\lambda}|f(z)|^2)^2}
\]

and it is clear that \( u_\lambda \) is a scaling family of solutions of (1.2.1).

Let \( z_0 \) be a zero of \( f \). We know that \( z_0 \neq 0 \) and \( f'(z_0) \neq 0 \). Thus

\[
u_\lambda(z_0) \sim 2\lambda \to +\infty \quad \text{as } \lambda \to +\infty
\]

while if \( f(z) \neq 0 \) then

\[
u_\lambda(z) \sim -2\lambda \to -\infty \quad \text{as } \lambda \to -\infty.
\]

Points like \( z_0 \) are referred as blow-up points.

Thus as \( \lambda \to +\infty \), the blow-up set of \( u_\lambda \) consists of the zeros of \( f \). Similarly, as \( \lambda \to -\infty \), the blow-up sets of \( u_\lambda \) consists of the poles of \( f \).
Remark 1.8. In general it is very hard to solve the residue equations (1.4.8) (for type I) and (1.6.2) (for type II) directly, though some simplest cases had been treated in [34, 35] for \( \rho = 4\pi, 8\pi \) and \( 12\pi \).

2. Type I solutions: Evenness and algebraic integrability

Let \( \rho = 4\pi l, l \in \mathbb{N} \). Let \( u \) be a type I solution and \( f \) be a developing map of \( u \). In this section we will prove Theorem 0.4 stated in the introduction. Proposition 1.6 proves that if \( l \) is odd then the solution is of type I. We will start by proving the converse in Theorem 2.5, i.e., if the solution is of type I then \( l \) must be odd. At the same time the evenness of \( u \) is deduced.

2.1. The evenness of solutions. Recall the logarithmic derivative

\[
    g = \left( \log f \right)' = \frac{f'}{f}
\]

which is elliptic on \( E' = \mathbb{C}/\Lambda' \) with \( \Lambda' = \mathbb{Z}\omega_1 + \mathbb{Z}2\omega_2 \). For the ease of notations we will use \( \omega'_1 = \omega_1 \) and \( \omega'_2 = 2\omega_2 \). In the following all the elliptic functions are with respect to the torus \( T' \).

Since \( g \) has zero at \( z = 0 \) of order \( l \), it also has zero of order \( l \) at \( z = \omega_2 \). There are no other zeros hence it has simple poles at \( p_1, \ldots, p_l \) and \( q_1, \ldots, q_l \) where \( p_i \)'s are simple zeros of \( f \) and \( q_i \)'s are simple poles of \( f \) modulo \( \Lambda' \).

Thus we may assume that

\[
    q_i = p_i + \omega_2, \quad i = 1, \ldots, l.
\]

From

\[
    f(z) = f(0) \exp \int_0^z g(w) \, dw,
\]

the residues of \( g \) are 1 at \( p_i \)'s and \(-1\) at \( q_i \)'s. Thus we may write \( g \) as

\[
(2.1.1) \quad g(z) = \sum_{i=1}^l \left( \xi(z - p_i) - \xi(z - p_i - \omega_2) \right) + c
\]

By (1.4.1), it is easily seen that \( c = l\eta_2/2 \).

There are also other useful equivalent forms of \( g \):

\[
    g(z) = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^l \left( 2\xi(z - p_i) - \xi(z - p_i - \omega_2) - \xi(z - p_i + \omega_2) \right)
\]

\[
    = -\frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^l \frac{\psi'(z - p_i)}{\psi(z - p_i) - e_2}
\]

\[
    = -\frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^l \frac{d}{dz} \log (\psi(z - p_i) - e_2)
\]

by the addition formula.

Remark 2.2. The middle formula says that up to a constant \( g(z) \) is the sum of slopes of the lines from \( (\psi(\omega_2), \psi'(\omega_2)) = (e_2, 0) \) to \( (\psi(z - p_i), \psi'(z - p_i)) \) of the torus \( T' \) under the standard cubic embedding into \( \mathbb{C}^2 \cup \{\infty\} \).
The only constraint remained is the zero order of $g$ at $z = 0$. Namely

$$0 = g(0) = g'(0) = \cdots = g^{(l-1)}(0).$$

The proof starts by noticing that

$$2g(0) = \sum \frac{\varphi'(p_i)}{\varphi(p_i) - e_2} = \sum s(p_i)$$

is the first (degree one) symmetric polynomial of the slops $s(p_i)$. It is reasonable to expect that some of the higher derivatives $g^{(m)}(0)$ are also higher degree symmetric polynomials of slops. The expectation turns out to be true only for $m$ even and for odd degree polynomials:

**Proposition 2.3.** The even order differentiation $g^{(2j)}(0)$, $j = 0, \ldots, \left\lfloor \frac{l-1}{2} \right\rfloor$ from a basis of the odd degree symmetric polynomials in $s_i$’s up to degree $l$ for $l$ being odd and up to degree $l−1$ for $l$ being even.

**Proof.** Consider the slop function

$$s(z) = \frac{d}{dz} \log(\varphi(z) - e_2) = \frac{\varphi'(z)}{\varphi(z) - e_2}$$

$$= -2\zeta(z) + \zeta(z + \omega_2) + \zeta(z - \omega_2)$$

$$= -2(\zeta(z) - \zeta(z - \omega_2) - \eta_2/2).$$

By differentiating the last equation, we get

$$\frac{1}{2}s'(z) = \varphi(z) - \varphi(z - \omega_2)$$

$$= \varphi(z) - e_2 - \frac{\mu}{\varphi(z) - e_2}$$

where we have used the half period formula with

$$\mu = (e_1 - e_2)(e_3 - e_2) = e_1e_3 - (e_1 + e_3)e_2 + e_2^2 = 2e_2^2 + e_1e_3.$$

Also

$$\frac{1}{2}s'' = \varphi' + \frac{\mu\varphi'}{(\varphi - e_2)^2}$$

$$= s(\varphi - e_2 + \frac{\mu}{\varphi - e_2}).$$

(Notice the variations on signs with (2.3.2).) Then we have

**Lemma 2.4.** The slope satisfies the ODE:

$$s'' = \frac{1}{2}s^3 - 6e_2s.$$  

**Proof.** We will compute $s''$ in a different way, namely

$$s' = \frac{\varphi''}{\varphi - e_2} - \frac{\varphi'\varphi'}{\varphi - e_2} = \frac{6\varphi^2 - \frac{1}{2}g^2}{\varphi - e_2} - s^2.$$
It is elementary to see

\[ 6g^2 - \frac{g^2}{2} = 6(\wp - e)^2 + 12e_2(\wp - e) + 6e_2^2 - \frac{g^2}{2} \]

and

\[ 6e_2^2 - \frac{g^2}{2} = 6e_2^2 + 2(e_1e_2 + e_3e_2 + e_1e_3) = 2(2e_2^2 + e_1e_3) = 2\mu. \]

Thus (2.4.2) becomes

\[ s' = 12e_2 - s^2 + 6(\wp - e) + \frac{2\mu}{\wp - e}. \]

Then

\[ s'' = -2ss' + 6\wp' - \frac{2\mu s}{\wp - e} \]

\[ = -24e_2s + 2s^3 - 12s(\wp - e) - \frac{4\mu s}{\wp - e} + 6s(\wp - e) - \frac{2\mu s}{\wp - e} \]

\[ = -24e_2s + 2s^3 - 6s\left(\wp - e + \frac{\mu}{\wp - e}\right) \]

\[ = -24e_2s + 2s^3 - 3s'', \]

where the last equality is by (2.4.1). The lemma follows.

To proceed to higher even derivatives, we notice that

\[ (s^k)^'' = (ks^{k-1}s')' = k(k-1)s^{k-2}(s')^2 + ks^{k-1}s''. \]

By (2.3.2) and (2.4.1),

\[ (s')^2 = 4\left(\wp - e - \frac{\mu}{\wp - e}\right)^2 \]

\[ = 4\left(\wp - e + \frac{\mu}{\wp - e}\right)^2 - 16\mu = \left(\frac{s''}{s}\right)^2 - 16\mu \]

which is an even degree polynomial in \( s \) of degree 4 by Lemma 2.4. Thus \((s^k)''\) is odd in \( s \) of degree \( k + 2 \) if \( k \) is odd. By induction we then have that \( s^{(2j)} \) is a degree \( 2j + 1 \) odd polynomial in \( s \).

The proposition now follows easily from

\[ 2g^{(2j)}(0) = \sum_{i=1}^{l} s^{(2j)}(p_i) \]

and general facts on symmetric polynomials.

Now we are ready to prove

**Theorem 2.5.** Let \( \rho = 4\pi l \). If the developing map \( f \) satisfies the type I relation (1.3.2), then \( l \) is odd. Furthermore \( g(-z) = -g(z) \) and \( u(-z) = u(z) \).
Proof. Consider the polynomial
\[ S(x) = \prod_{i=1}^{l}(x - s(p_i)). \]

By Proposition 2.3, the relations
\[ 0 = g(0) = g''(0) = \cdots = g^{(2^{(i-1)})}(0) \]
lead to the vanishing of all odd symmetric polynomials of \( s(p_i)'s \) in the expansion of \( S(x) \).

If \( l = 2n \), then \( S(x) \) consists of only even degrees and its roots \( s(p_i) \) must appear in pairs. Without loss of generality we may assume that
\[ (2.5.1) \quad s(p_1) = -s(p_{n+1}), s(p_2) = -s(p_{n+2}), \ldots, s(p_n) = -s(p_{2n}). \]

Notice that the slope equation
\[ \frac{\varphi'(a)}{\varphi(a) - e_2} = s(a) = -s(b) = -\frac{\varphi'(b)}{\varphi(b) - e_2} \]
leads to \( b = -a \) or \( b = a + \omega_2 \). To see this, notice that under the cubic embedding \( z \mapsto (\varphi(z), \varphi'(z)) \), \( s(a) \) is slope of the line \( \ell_a \) connecting the images of \( z = \omega_2 \) and \( z = a \), with the unique third intersection point being \( z = -a - \omega_2 \) and \( s(-a - \omega_2) = s(a) \). Thus the slope function defines a branched double cover
\[ s : E' \to S^2 = \mathbb{CP}^1. \]
(From (2.3.2), it has 4 branch points given by \( \varphi(z) = e_2 \pm \sqrt{\mu} \).

In particular the line with slope \(-s(a) = s(-a) \) and passing through \((e_2, 0)\) must be \( \ell_{-a} \equiv \ell_{a + \omega_2} \). That is, \( b = -a \) or \( b = a + \omega_2 \) as claimed.

In our case (2.5.1), we must conclude \( p_{n+1} = -p_1 \) since \( p_1 + \omega_2 = q_1 \) can not appear in \( p_i's \). In the same way we conclude that
\[ (2.5.2) \quad p_i = -p_{i+n}, \quad i = 1, \ldots, n. \]

In particular \( \sum p_i = 0 \). But this violates \( \sum p_i \equiv 1/2 \omega_1 \) modulo \( \Lambda' \) (which follows from \( g(z + \omega_2) = -g(z) \) in Lemma 1.4.5), hence \( l \) is odd.

For \( l = 2n + 1 \), \( S(x) \) is a polynomial in odd degrees only. In particular there is a root \( x = 0 \) of \( S(x) \) and we may assume that \( s(p_{2n+1}) = 0 \) (namely \( p_{2n+1} = 1/2 \omega_1 + 1/2 (\omega'_1 + \omega'_2) = 1/2 \omega_1 + \omega_2 \)).

Consider the polynomial \( S(x)/x \) in pure even degrees, then in exactly the same manner as above we conclude that (2.5.2) still holds and
\[ S(x) = x \prod_{i=1}^{n}(x - s(p_i))(x + s(p_i)). \]

It is clear that now \( g(-z) = -g(z) \). Then \( f(-z) = f(z) \), which implies that \( u \) is an even function. \( \square \)
2.6. The polynomial systems. The remaining statements in Theorem 0.4 which have not been proved yet are that these \( p_1, \ldots, p_n \) are determined by polynomial equations in \( \wp(p_i) \)’s.

Philosophically this follows easily from (2.1.1) and (2.3.2). Indeed it is clear that the odd order derivatives of \( g \) at \( z = 0 \) will involve only rational expressions with denominator being powers of \( \wp(p_i) - e_2 \) and with at most even derivatives \( \wp(z)^{(2j)}(p_i) \) in the numerator (all expressions in \(-p_i\) are transformed into expressions in \( p_i \)). The latter can be written into polynomials in \( \wp(p_i) \) and thus the polynomial system is obtained.

Proof of Theorem 0.4. To write down the complete set of polynomial equations explicitly, recall

\[
g(z) = \sum_{i=1}^{l} (\zeta(z - p_i) - \zeta(z - p_i - \omega_2) - \eta_2/2),
\]

(2.6.1) \[
-g'(z) = \sum_{i=1}^{l} (\wp(z - p_i) - \wp(z - p_i - \omega_2)),
\]

\[
-g^{(m+1)}(z) = \sum_{i=1}^{l} (\wp^{(m)}(z - p_i) - \wp^{(m)}(z - p_i - \omega_2)) \quad \forall m \in \mathbb{Z}_{\geq 0},
\]

and the half period formula (let \( \bar{\wp}(p) = \wp(p + \omega_2) \))

\[
\bar{\wp} = e_2 + \frac{\mu}{\wp - e_2}
\]

where \( \mu = (e_1 - e_2)(e_3 - e_2) \). Equivalently \( (\wp - e_2)(\bar{\wp} - e_2) = \mu \).

In the proof of Theorem 2.5, the even order derivatives \( g^{(2j)}(0) = 0 \), \( j = 0, \ldots, n \), leads to the evenness of solutions. We will show that the remaining odd order differentiations \( g^{(2j+1)}(0) = 0 \), \( j = 0, \ldots, n-1 \), leads to the desired polynomial system.

To calculate \( g^{(2j+1)}(0) \), we first notice that

Lemma 2.7. For \( k \in \mathbb{N} \), \( (\wp^k)'' \) is a degree \( k + 1 \) polynomial in \( \wp \). Indeed

\[
(\wp^k)'' = 2k(2k+1)\wp^{k+1} - \frac{g_2}{2}k(2k-1)\wp^{k-1} - k(k-1)g_3\wp^{k-2}.
\]

Proof. Since \( (\wp^k)' = k\wp^{k-1}\wp' \), we get

\[
(\wp^k)'' = k(k-1)\wp^{k-2}(\wp')^2 + k\wp^{k-1}\wp''.
\]

The lemma follows from the cubic relations. \( \square \)

Now we set \( x_i = \wp(p_i) \), \( \bar{x}_i = \bar{\wp}(p_i) = \wp(p_i + \omega_2) \) for \( i = 1, \ldots, n \). It is clear that \( (x_i - e_2)(\bar{x}_i - e_2) = \mu \) for all \( i = 1, \ldots, n \).

During the following computations, we assume that \( p_{2n+1} = \frac{1}{2}\omega_1 \) and \( p_{n+i} = -p_i \) for \( i = 1, \ldots, n \). For the other case \( p_{2n+1} = \frac{1}{2}\omega_1 + \omega_2 \), we could replace \( f \) by \( 1/f \) to reduce to the former case, since \( f \) and \( 1/f \) give rise to the same solution \( u \).
For \( j = 0 \) we have from (2.6.1) that
\[
-g'(0) = 2 \sum_{i=1}^{n} x_i + e_1 - 2 \sum_{i=1}^{n} \tilde{x}_i - e_3 = 0.
\]
This is the degree one equation \((m = 1)\) with \( c_1 = -\frac{1}{2}(e_1 - e_3) \neq 0 \).

For \( j = 1 \), since
\[
-g''' = \sum_{l=1}^{n} \phi''' - \sum_{l=1}^{n} \tilde{\phi}''' = 6 \sum_{l=1}^{n} \phi^2 - 6 \sum_{l=1}^{n} \tilde{\phi}^2,
\]
the equation \( g'''(0) = 0 \) becomes
\[
\sum_{i=1}^{n} x_i^2 - \sum_{i=1}^{n} \tilde{x}_i^2 = -\frac{1}{2}(e_1^2 - e_3^2).
\]
This is the degree two equation \((m = 2)\) with \( c_2 = -\frac{1}{2}(e_1^2 - e_3^2) \).

The general case follows from Lemma 2.7. Suppose that \( g^{(2j+1)}(0) = 0 \)
gives rise to a new polynomial relation \( \sum_{i=1}^{n} x_i^j - \sum_{i=1}^{n} \tilde{x}_i^j = c_j \). A further
double differentiation increases the degree of the polynomial in \( \varphi \) by one,
hence it gives rise to a new relation \( \sum_{i=1}^{n} \varphi^{j+1} - \sum_{i=1}^{n} \tilde{\varphi}^{j+1} = c_{j+1} \), with the
universal constant \( c_{j+1} \) being determined by \( c_1, c_2, g_2, g_3 \) recursively.

Therefore, we conclude that \( x_i = \varphi(p_i), \tilde{x}_i = \varphi(p_i + \omega) \), \( i = 1, \ldots, n \),
satisfy the polynomial system:
\[
\sum_{i=1}^{n} x_i^j - \sum_{i=1}^{n} \tilde{x}_i^j = c_j, \quad j = 1, \ldots, n,
\]
\[
(x_i - e_2)(\tilde{x}_i - e_2) = \mu, \quad i = 1, \ldots, n,
\]
which is easily seen to be equivalent to the system (0.4.1).

Conversely, any solution of the polynomial system gives rise to a function \( g \) which satisfies
\[
g^{(j)}(0) = 0, \quad j = 0, 1, \ldots, 2n.
\]
From \( g \), the developing map \( f \) is then constructed by Proposition 1.4.8. \( \Box \)

**Remark 2.8.** In the next section we will prove that except for a finite set
of tori, the mean field equation (0.1.3) has exactly \( n + 1 \) solutions for \( \rho = 4 \pi l \) \( l = 2n + 1 \). This implies that, except for those tori, the above
polynomial system has exactly \( n + 1 \) solutions up to permutation symmetry
by \( S_n \). Equivalently it has \( (n + 1)! \) solutions.

Since \( c_j(\tau)'s \) are all holomorphic in \( \tau \), solutions \((x_i(\tau), \tilde{x}_i(\tau))\) of the
polynomial system, hence the developing map \( f(z; \tau) \), should then depend on
\( \tau \) holomorphically. It is not so obvious how to prove the holomorphic
dependence of \( f(z; \tau) \) in the moduli space of tori by other methods.

**Example 2.9.** For \( \rho = 4 \pi, l = 1 \) and \( n = 0 \). Then \( p_1 = \frac{1}{4} \omega_1 \). The polynomial
system is empty and the solution \( u \) is unique. This was first proved in [34].
**Example 2.10.** Consider the case $\rho = 12\pi$, i.e. $l = 3$ and $n = 1$. Let $p_1 = a.$ $p_2 = -a$ and $p_3 = \frac{1}{2}\omega_1$. Then the equation $g'(0) = 0$ becomes

$$2\left( (\varphi(a) - e_2) - \frac{\mu}{\varphi(a) - e_2} \right) + (e_1 - e_3) = 0.$$ 

That is, we get a degree 2 polynomial in $\varphi(a)$:

$$(\varphi(a) - e_2)^2 + \frac{1}{2}(e_1 - e_3)(\varphi(a) - e_2) - \mu = 0$$

and then

$$\varphi(a) = e_2 + \frac{1}{4}(e_3 - e_1) \pm \frac{1}{4} \sqrt{(e_3 - e_1)^2 + 16(e_1 - e_2)(e_3 - e_2)}.$$ 

These are exactly the solutions obtained in [35] via a different method. In particular there are precisely two solutions of the mean field equation on any torus $E$ with non-zero discriminant $(e_3 - e_1)^2 + 16(e_1 - e_2)(e_3 - e_2) \neq 0$ for the double cover $E'$, and with $\rho = 12\pi$. The case with zero discriminant will be discussed in Example 3.6.

**Example 2.11.** Consider the case $\rho = 20\pi$, i.e. $l = 5$ and $n = 2$. The full set of polynomial equations in $x_i$’s and $\hat{x}_i$’s is given by

$$x_1 + x_2 - \hat{x}_1 - \hat{x}_2 = c_1 = -\frac{1}{2}(e_1 - e_3),$$

$$x_1^2 + x_2^2 - \hat{x}_1^2 - \hat{x}_2^2 = c_2 = -\frac{1}{2}(e_1^2 - e_3^2),$$

$$(x_1 - e_2)(\hat{x}_1 - e_2) = \mu,$$

$$(x_2 - e_2)(\hat{x}_2 - e_2) = \mu.$$ 

Now the number of solutions $N'_n$ (here $n = 2$) for $x_1, x_2, \hat{x}_1, \hat{x}_2$ can be calculated by the Bezout theorem to be $N'_n = 1 \times 2 \times 2 \times 2 - r^\infty_2 = 8 - r^\infty_2$ where $r^\infty_2$ is the number of solutions at $\infty$, counted with multiplicity, of the projectivized system of polynomial equations. The projective system is

$$X_1 + X_2 - \hat{X}_1 - \hat{X}_2 = c_1X_0,$$

$$X_1^2 + X_2^2 - \hat{X}_1^2 - \hat{X}_2^2 = c_2X_0^2,$$

$$(X_1 - e_2X_0)(\hat{X}_1 - e_2X_0) = \mu X_0^2,$$

$$(X_2 - e_2X_0)(\hat{X}_2 - e_2X_0) = \mu X_0^2.$$ 

And the infinity solutions are given by setting $X_0 = 0$:

$$X_1 + X_2 = \hat{X}_1 + \hat{X}_2, \quad X_1^2 + X_2^2 = \hat{X}_1^2 + \hat{X}_2^2,$$

$$X_1\hat{X}_1 = 0, \quad X_2\hat{X}_2 = 0.$$ 

This shows that $\{X_1, X_2\} = \{\hat{X}_1, \hat{X}_2\}$. Since these four variables are not all zero, it is easy to see that there are precisely two solutions given by

$$p_1 : \quad X_1 = 0 = \hat{X}_2, \quad X_2 = \hat{X}_1 \neq 0,$$

$$p_2 : \quad X_2 = 0 = \hat{X}_1, \quad X_1 = \hat{X}_2 \neq 0.$$
It remains to compute the multiplicity of $P_1$ and $P_2$. Consider $P_1$ first. Since it is in the chart $\tilde{U}_1 := \{ \tilde{x}_1 \neq 0 \}$, in terms of $y_i = X_i / \tilde{x}_1$, $i = 1, 2$, $\tilde{y}_2 = \tilde{x}_2 / \tilde{x}_1$ and $y_0 = X_0 / \tilde{x}_1$, $P_1$ has coordinates $(y_0, y_1, y_2, \tilde{y}_2) = (0, 0, 1, 0)$ and the system at point $P_1$ reads as $f_i = 0$, $i = 1, \ldots, 4$, where
\[
\begin{align*}
  f_1 &= y_1 + y_2 - 1 - \tilde{y}_2 - c_1 y_0, \\
  f_2 &= y_1^2 + (y_2 - 1)^2 + 2(y_2 - 1) - \tilde{y}_2^2 - c_2 y_0^2, \\
  f_3 &= (y_1 - e_2 y_0)(1 - e_2 y_0) - \mu y_0^3 = y_1 + \cdot \cdot \cdot , \\
  f_4 &= (y_2 - e_2 y_0)(\tilde{y}_2 - e_2 y_0) - \mu y_0^2 = (y_2 - 1)\tilde{y}_2 + \tilde{y}_2 + \cdot \cdot \cdot .
\end{align*}
\]
From these expressions, the appearance of degree one monomial in each $f_i$ shows that the local analytic coordinates $(y_0, y_1, y_2 - 1, \tilde{y}_2)$ at the point $P_1$ can be replaced by $f_1, f_3, f_2, f_4$ accordingly, and thus the multiplicity is one. Indeed $P_1 = (0, 0, 1, 0)$ is a simple point of $\{f_i = 0\}$ by computing the Jacobian
\[
\det \frac{\partial (f_1, f_2, f_3, f_4)}{\partial (y_0, y_1, y_2, \tilde{y}_2)}(0, 0, 1, 0) = e_1 - e_3 \neq 0.
\]
Similarly the multiplicity at $P_2$ is one. Thus $r_2^\infty = 2$ and $N_2' = 8 - 2 = 6$.

Since any reordering of $p_i$’s leads to the same solution, also it is easy to see that for generic tori we do not have any solution with $x_1 = x_2$, so finally
\[N_2 = N_2' / 2! = 3 = 2 + 1.
\]

**Remark 2.12.** The above method can be extended to the case $n = 3$, $\rho = 28\pi$ to show that $N_3 = 4$ since in this case the infinity solutions are still zero dimensional. It fails for $n \geq 4$ since positive dimensional intersections at infinity do occur and excess intersection theory is needed. The cases $n = 4$ and $n = 5$ were recently settled in [33] where the infinity solutions are one dimensional.

3. Lamé for type I: Finite monodromies

In this section we prove Theorem 0.4.1 (c.f. Theorem 3.5).

### 3.1. From mean field equations to Lamé

The second order equation
\[(3.1.1) \quad L_{\eta, B} w := w''(z) - (\eta(\eta + 1)\varphi(z) + B)w(z) = 0\]
is known as the Lamé equation with two parameters $\eta$ and $B$; the parameter $\eta$ is called the *index* and $B$ is the called the “accessary parameter”.

#### 3.1.1. Recall that for any two linearly independent solutions $w_1$ and $w_2$ of a general second order ODE $w'' = \lambda w$, the Schwarzian derivative
\[ S(h) = \frac{h'''}{h'} - \frac{3}{2} \left( \frac{h''}{h'} \right)^2 \]
of $h = \frac{w_1}{w_2}$ satisfies $S(h) = -2I$, hence for any two linear independent local solutions $w_1, w_2$ of the Lamé equation (3.1.1) we have

$$S\left(\frac{w_1}{w_2}\right) = -2(\eta(\eta + 1)\wp(z) + B).$$

Conversely if $h_1$ is meromorphic function with $S(h_1) = -2(\eta(\eta + 1)\wp(z) + B)$, then $S(h_1) = S\left(\frac{w_1}{w_2}\right)$ for a chosen pair of linearly independent solutions $w_1, w_2$ of (3.1.1), therefore $h_1$ is equal to a linear fractional transformation of $\frac{w_1}{w_2}$, or equivalently there exists a pair of linearly independent solutions $w_3, w_4$ of (3.1.1) such that $h_1 = \frac{w_3}{w_4}$.

3.1.2. Suppose that $u$ is a solution of the mean field equation

$$\Box u + e^u = \rho \delta_0$$

on a flat torus $E = \mathbb{C}/\Lambda$, $\Lambda = \mathbb{Z}\omega_1 + \mathbb{Z}\omega_2$, and $f$ is a developing map of $u$ on a covering space of the punctured torus $E \smallsetminus \{0\}$. Locally $u$ is expressed in $f$ via

$$u(z) = \log \frac{8|f'(z)|^2}{(1 + |f(z)|^2)^2}.$$

Let $\eta := \frac{\rho}{8\pi}$. By (1.1.4), we have

$$S(f) := \frac{f'''}{f'} - \frac{3}{2} \left(\frac{f''}{f'}\right)^2$$

$$u_{zz} - \frac{1}{2} u_z^2 = -2\eta(\eta + 1)\frac{1}{z^2} + O(1),$$

where the last equality follows from the asymptotic expansion

$$u \sim 4\eta \log |z|$$

at $z = 0$ and that $u$ is smooth outside $z = 0$ in $E$. The expression of $S(f)$ in $u$ shows that it is a meromorphic function on $E$, which is holomorphic outside $\{0\}$ and its polar part at $z = 0$ is given by the last expression in (3.1.3). Therefore there exists a constant $B = B(E, \eta, u)$ such that

$$S(f) = u_{zz} - \frac{1}{2} u_z^2 = -2(\eta(\eta + 1)\wp(z) + B).$$

It follows that there exists two linearly independents solutions $w_1$ and $w_2$ of the Lamé equation (3.1.1) with accessory parameter $B(E, \eta, u)$ such that $f = \frac{w_1}{w_2}$.

3.1.3. The Lamé equation (3.1.1) had been studied in the classical literature in two special cases, very extensively in case when the index $\eta$ is a positive integer, and somewhat less so in the case when the index $\eta$ is a half-integer, i.e. $2\eta = 2n + 1$ is an odd positive integer. We have seen in the previous sections that the former case corresponds to type II solutions while the latter case is for type I solutions. The main objective of this section is to prove that for any odd positive integer $2n + 1$, on all but a finite number of isomorphism classes of elliptic curves, there are precisely $n + 1$ solutions to the mean field equation $\Box u + e^u = 4\pi(2n + 1)\delta_0$. 


The following theorem is due to Brioschi [5], Halphen [22, pp. 471–473] and Crawford [15] in the late nineteenth century; see for [15] for a complete proof. See also [45, pp. 162–164] for a succinct presentation of Halphen’s transformation and Crawford’s procedure for analyzing Brioschi’s solution; c.f. [54, p. 570].

**Theorem 3.2.** Let $n$ be a non-negative integer.

(a) There exists a monic polynomial $p_n(B; \Lambda) = p_n(B, g_2(\Lambda), g_3(\Lambda))$ of degree $n + 1$ in $B$ with coefficients in $\mathbb{Z}[\frac{g_2(\Lambda)}{4}, \frac{g_3(\Lambda)}{4}]$ such that the Lamé equation $L_{n+1/2, B} w = 0$ on $\mathbb{C}/\Lambda$ has all solutions free from logarithm at $z = 0$ if and only if $p_n(B) = 0$. This polynomial $p_n(B, g_2, g_3) \in \mathbb{Z}[\frac{1}{4}][B, g_2, g_3]$ is homogeneous of weight $n$ if $B, g_2, g_3$ are given weights $1, 2, 3$ respectively.

(b) For any lattice $\Lambda$ outside a finite subset $S_n$ of homothety classes of lattices in $\mathbb{C}$, the polynomial $p_n(B; \Lambda)$ has $n$ distinct roots.

**Proof.** The logarithm-free solutions of the Lamé equation $L_{n+1/2, B} w = 0$ were first discovered by Brioschi [5, p. 314], but the underlying structure are more transparently exhibited using Halphen’s transformation [22, p. 471] as carried out in detail by Crawford [15]. The statement (a) is proved in [15]; see also [45, p. 164] for a presentation of Crawford’s proof. A slightly different proof of (a) following the same train of ideas can be found in [2, p. 26–28].

Crawford’s proof provides a recursive formula for $p_n(B; \Lambda)$. When $\Lambda$ is of the form $\mathbb{Z} + \sqrt{-1} a \mathbb{Z}$ with $a \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$, this recursive formula also produces a Sturm sequence starting with $p_n(B)$, therefore $p_n(B; \Lambda)$ has $n + 1$ distinct real roots; see [15, p. 94]. This implies that the discriminant of the polynomial $p_n(B; \Lambda)$, which is a modular form for $SL_2(\mathbb{Z})$, is not identically 0. The statement (b) follows. See 3.3 for remarks on Sturm’s theorem used in Crawford’s proof. □

**Remark 3.2.1.** We will give an alternative proof of part (a) of Theorem 3.2 in 3.4, which is essentially local near $z = 0$. Our proof not only provides a new construction of the polynomial $p_n(B)$, it also generalizes to the case with multiple singular sources. This generalization will be presented in a later work.

### 3.3. Remark on Sturm’s theorem.

Crawford’s proof in [15, p. 94] that the polynomial $p_n(B; \Lambda)$ has $n + 1$ distinct real roots for rectangular tori uses a fact closely related to Sturm’s theorem on real roots of polynomials over $\mathbb{R}$, not found in standard treatment of this topic, such as [51, 11.3] and [28, 16].

---

16 The statement that $p_n(B)$ has $n + 1$ distinct real roots was proved in [15, p. 94] under the condition that the $x$-coordinates of the three non-trivial two-torsion points, $e_i = \wp(\omega_i/2; \Lambda)$ for $i = 1, 2, 3$, are real numbers. This is the case when the lattice $\Lambda$ is of the form $\Lambda_\tau$ with $\tau \in \sqrt{-1} \mathbb{R}_{>0}$. 

We have been able to find only one reference of this fact, as a “starred exercise” in [50, p. 149 ex. 30]. In Proposition 3.3.3 below we provide a mild generalization of the usual form of Sturm’s theorem for the convenience of the readers. Its corollary 3.3.4 is equivalent to [50, p. 149 ex. 30].

**Definition 3.3.1.** A sequence of non-zero polynomials
\[ f_0(x), f_1(x), \ldots, f_m(x) \in \mathbb{R}[x] \]
is a Sturm sequence on \((a, b)\) if the following two properties hold.

(i) \(f_m(x)\) is either positive definite or negative definite on \((a, b)\).

(ii) Suppose that \(\xi \in (a, b)\) and \(f_i(\xi) = 0\) for some \(i \leq i \leq m - 1\). Then \(f_{i-1}(\xi)\) and \(f_{i+1}(\xi)\) have opposite signs (in the sense that either they are both non-zero with opposite signs, or are both zero.\(^{18}\))

**Remark.** There is an extra condition in the conventional definition of a Sturm sequence: \(f_1(\xi) \text{ and } f_0(\xi) \) have the same sign for every root \(\xi\) of \(f_0(x)\) in \((a, b)\). This condition has been dropped in Definition 3.3.1 above.

**3.3.2. Definition.** Let \(f_0(x), f_1(x), \ldots, f_m(x)\) be a Sturm sequence.

(1) For every real number \(\xi\), define \(\sigma(\xi)\) to be the total number of changes of signs in the sequence \((f_0(\xi^+), f_1(\xi^+), \ldots, f_{m-1}(\xi^+), f_m(\xi))\).\(^{19}\)

(2) Define a \([-1, 0, 1]\)-valued “local index” function \(\epsilon_{f_0(x)}\) on \(\mathbb{R}\) attached to a real polynomial \(f_0(x) \in \mathbb{R}[x]\) as follows.

- Suppose that \(f_0(\xi) = 0^{20}\) and \(\text{mult}_{x=\xi} f_0(x)\) is odd.\(^{21}\) Define
  \[ \epsilon_{f_0(x)}(\xi) := \begin{cases} 
  1 & \text{if } f_0(\xi^+) \text{ and } f_1(\xi^+) \text{ have the same sign} \\
  -1 & \text{if } f_0(\xi^+) \text{ and } f_1(\xi^+) \text{ have opposite signs} 
\end{cases} \]

- \(\epsilon_{f_0(x)}(\xi) = 0\) if \(\text{mult}_{x=\xi} f_0(x)\) is even. In particular \(\epsilon_{f_0(x)}(\xi) = 0\) if \(f_0(\xi) \neq 0\).

---

\(^{17}\)This fact must be familiar to all educated scientists in the late nineteenth and early twentieth century, often used freely without comments in mathematical writings at the time. This is the case for the proofs in [54, p. 557] and [45, p. 163] for the existence of \(2m+1\) distinct real roots of the polynomial \(l_m(B)\) corresponding to \(2m+1\) Lamé functions for the equation
\[ \frac{d^2w}{dz^2} - (m(m+1)\varphi(z; \Lambda) + B)w = 0 \]
when \(\Lambda = \mathbb{Z} + \sqrt{-a} \mathbb{Z}\) for some \(a \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}\) and \(m \in \mathbb{N}_{>0}\). However this then-well-known fact is no longer part of the general education for mathematicians today.

\(^{18}\)The latter possibility is ruled out by condition (i).

\(^{19}\)Here we used \(f_i(\xi^+)\) to make sure that each term has a well-defined sign. In view of condition (ii), we could have used the sequence \((f_0(\xi^+), f_1(\xi), \ldots, f_{m-1}(\xi), f_m(\xi))\) in the definition, suppress zeros when counting the number of variations of signs in it.

\(^{20}\)For a zero \(\xi\) of \(f_0(x)\), the sign of \(f_0(x)\) changes when \(x\) moves across \(\xi\) if and only if \(\text{mult}_{x=\xi} f_0(x)\) is odd.
We remark that the function \( v \) satisfies the similar equation as \( u \) in (3.1.3), but \( v \) is analytic in nature while \( u \) is only a real function.

The indicial equation at \( z = 0 \) is given by
\[
\lambda^2 - \lambda - \eta(\eta + 1) = (\lambda - (\eta + 1))(\lambda + \eta) = 0.
\]
If there are logarithmic solutions, the fundamental solutions are given as
\[
(3.4.1) \quad w_1(z) = z^{\eta+1}h_1(z), \quad w_2(z) = \xi w_1(z) \log z + z^{-\eta}h_2(z),
\]
where \( \xi \neq 0 \) and \( h_1, h_2 \) are holomorphic and non-zero at \( z = 0 \). But then
\[
f = \frac{aw_1 + bw_2}{cw_1 + dw_2}
\]
is easily seen to be logarithmic as well if \( ad - bc \neq 0 \), thus the Lamé equation has no logarithmic solutions at \( z = 0 \) if and only if we have one non-trivial solution quotient \( f \) to be logarithmic free at \( z = 0 \).

Now suppose that the Lamé equation has no solutions with logarithmic term. Let \( f \) be a ratio of two independent solutions. Without lose of generality, we may assume that \( f \) is regular at \( 0 \). Since \( \eta = n + \frac{1}{2} \) and

\[
S(f) = -2((n + \frac{1}{2})(n + \frac{3}{2})\varphi(z) + B),
\]

to require that \( f \) is logarithmic free at \( z = 0 \) is equivalent to that \( f(z) = c_0 + c_{2n+2}z^{2n+2} + \cdots \) near \( z = 0 \) with \( c_0 \neq 0 \).

Recall that

\[
\varphi(z) = \frac{1}{z^2} + \sum_{k \geq 1} (2k + 1)G_{k+1}z^{2k}
\]

where \( G_k = \sum_{\omega \in \Lambda} 1/\omega^{2k} \) is the standard Eisenstein series of weight \( 2k \) for \( \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z}) \). It is customary to write \( g_2 = 60G_2 \) and \( g_3 = 140G_3 \). It is also well known that all \( G_k \)'s are expressible as polynomials in \( g_2, g_3 \).

We will show that the solvability of the Schwarzian equation (3.4.2) for \( f \) being of the proposed form is equivalent to that \( B \) satisfies \( p_n(B) = 0 \) for some universal polynomial \( p_n(B, g_2, g_3) \) of degree \( n + 1 \). Indeed,

\[
v = \log f' = \log c_{2n+2}(2n+2) + (2n+1)\log z + \sum_{j \geq 1} d_jz^j.
\]

For convenience we set \( e_j = (j+1)d_{j+1} \) for \( j \geq 0 \) and then

\[
v' = \frac{2n+1}{z} + \sum_{j \geq 0} e_jz^j.
\]

The degree \( z^{-1} \) terms in

\[
v'' - \frac{1}{2}(v')^2 = -2((n + \frac{1}{2})(n + \frac{3}{2})\varphi(z) + B)
\]

match by our choice. There is no \( z^{-1} \) term in the RHS shows that \( e_0 = 0 \). Then the constant terms give \( e_1 = \frac{1}{2}2(2n+1)e_1 = -2B \), i.e. \( ne_1 = B \). For \( n = 0 \), we must conclude \( B = 0 \). Thus we set \( p_0(B) = B \).

Similarly, for \( j \geq 1 \), the degree \( j \) terms in the LHS give

\[
(j+1)e_{j+1} - \frac{1}{2}2(2n+1)e_{j+1} - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^{j-1} e_i e_{j-i}.
\]

Since there is no odd degree terms in the RHS, by considering \( j = 1, 3, 5, \cdots \) we first conclude inductively that \( e_i = 0 \) for \( i \) even.

Next we consider degree \( j = 2, 4, 6, \cdots \) terms inductively. Write \( E_k = e_{2k-1} \) for \( k \geq 1 \). Then \( j = 2k \) leads to

\[
2(k-n)E_{k+1} - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^{k} E_i E_{k+1-i} = -2((n + \frac{1}{2})(n + \frac{3}{2})(2k+1)G_{k+1}.
\]

\[
2(k-n)E_{k+1} - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^{k} E_i E_{k+1-i} = -2((n + \frac{1}{2})(n + \frac{3}{2})(2k+1)G_{k+1}.
\]
We have just seen that \( nE_1 = B \). If we assign degree \( k \) to \( G_k \), then (3.4.3) shows inductively that \( E_k = E_k(B, g_2, g_3) \) is a degree \( k \) polynomial in \( B \) which is homogeneous in \( B, g_2, g_3 \) of degree \( k \) up to \( k \leq n \).

Now put \( k = n \) in (3.4.3), the first term vanishes and we must have

\[
\tilde{p}_n(B, g_2, g_3) := \sum_{i=1}^{n} E_iE_{n+1-i} - 8(n + \frac{1}{2})^2(n + \frac{3}{2})G_{n+1}
\]

vanishes too. Up to a multiplicative constant, this \( \tilde{p}_n(B) \) is the degree \( n + 1 \) polynomial in \( B \) we search for. Indeed, by our inductive construction through (3.4.3), the leading coefficients \( c_n \) of the \( \tilde{p}_n(B) \) depends only on \( n \). Hence \( p_n(B, g_2, g_3) := c_n^{-1} \tilde{p}_n(B, g_2, g_3) \) is monic in \( B \) and homogeneous of degree \( n + 1 \) in \( B, g_2, g_3 \).

Conversely, if \( \tilde{p}_n(B) = 0 \), then \( E_1, \ldots, E_n \) can be solved by (3.4.3) up to \( k = n - 1 \). For \( k = n - 1 \), \( \tilde{p}_n(B) = 0 \) is equivalent to (3.4.3) at \( k = n \). By assigning any value to \( E_{n+1} \), we can use (3.4.3) for \( k \geq n + 1 \) to find \( E_j, j \geq n + 2 \). Thus this \( f \) is a solution to the Schwarzian equation (3.4.2) and is free from logarithmic terms. The proof is complete.

\[\square\]

**Remark 3.4.1.** Notice that \( E_{n+1} = e_{2n+1} = (2n + 2)d_{2n+2} \) is a free parameter. All \( E_k \)'s are determined by \( B \) and \( E_{n+1} \). For any \( B \) with \( p_n(B) = 0 \), the three constants \( c_0, c_{2n+2} \) and \( E_{n+1} \) provide the three dimensional freedom for \( f \) due to the freedom of \( \text{SL}(2, C) \) action on \( f \).

**Remark 3.4.2.** We have seen that the type I developing map \( f(z) \) is even. This also follows form our proof of Theorem 3.2 since we do not assume the a priori evenness during the proof.

To apply Theorem 3.2 to study mean field equations for \( \rho = 4\pi(2n + 1) \), the essential point is the following theorem.

**Theorem 3.5 (Theorem 0.4.1).** Let \( n \) be a non-negative integer. The projective monodromy group of the Lamé equation \( L_{n+1/2, B} w = 0 \) is isomorphic to Klein’s four-group \( (\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z})^2 \) if and only if there exists two meromorphic solutions \( w_1, w_2 \) on \( C \) of the above Lamé equations such that \( \frac{w_1}{w_2} \) is a type I developing map of a solution of the mean field equation \( \Delta u + e^u = 4\pi(2n + 1) \). Moreover, each such value of the accessory parameter \( B \) with the above property gives rise to exactly one type I solution.

**Proof.** Let \( u \) be a type I solution of the mean field equation \( \Delta u + e^u = \rho \delta_0 \) on \( C / \Lambda \) and let \( f \) be a normalized developing map of \( u \) satisfying the type I transformation rules (1.3.2). We know from Theorem 2.5 that there exists a non-negative integer \( n \) such that \( \rho = 4\pi(2n + 1) \), and we have seen that there exists a complex number \( B \) such that the Schwarzian derivative \( S(f) \) of \( f \) is equal to \(-2(n + \frac{1}{2})(n + \frac{3}{2})^2(2n + 3)\delta_0(z; \Lambda) + B \). Then local solutions of the Lamé equation \( L_{n+1/2, B} w = 0 \) are free of logarithmic solutions, and there exists two solutions \( w_1, w_2 \) over \( C \) such that \( f = \frac{w_1}{w_2} \). The projective monodromy group of the equation \( L_{n+1/2, B} w = 0 \) is canonically isomorphic to
the monodromy group of the meromorphic function $\frac{w_1}{w_2}$, which is a Klein four group. We have proved the “only if” part of Theorem 0.4.1.

Conversely, suppose that the projective monodromy group of a Lamé equation $L_{n+1/2,B}w = 0$ is a Klein four group. Then all local solutions of this Lamé equation are free of logarithmic singularities, and there are two linearly independent solutions $w_1, w_2$ of this equation which are meromorphic functions over $C$. It is easy to check from basic theory of linear ODE’s with regular singularities that the holomorphic map $\frac{w_1}{w_2} : \hat{C} \to \mathbb{P}^1(C)$ has no critical point outside $\Lambda$, and it has multiplicity $2n + 2$ at points of $\Lambda$.

Let $\rho : \Lambda \to \text{GL}_2(C)$ be the monodromy representation of the differential equation $L_{n+1/2,B}w = 0$ attached to the basis $w_1, w_2$ of solutions of $L_{n+1/2,B}w = 0$. Let $\bar{\rho} : \Lambda \to \text{PSL}_2(C)$ be the composition of $\rho$ with the canonical projection $\text{GL}_2(C) \to \text{PSL}_2(C)$. Because PSU(2) is a maximal compact subgroup of PSL(2), the finite subgroup $\text{Im}(\bar{\rho})$ of PSL(2) is a conjugate of a subgroup of PSU(2), i.e. there exists an element $S_1 \in \text{GL}_2(C)$ such that $S_1 \cdot \text{Im}(\bar{\rho}) \cdot S_1^{-1} \subset \text{PSU}(2)$. By Corollary 1.3.2, there exists an element $S_2 \in \text{PSU}(2)$ such that $S_2 \cdot S_1 \cdot \bar{\rho}(\omega_1) \cdot S_1^{-1} \cdot S_2^{-1}$ and $S_2 \cdot S_1 \cdot \bar{\rho}(\omega_2) \cdot S_1^{-1} \cdot S_2^{-1}$ are the image in $\text{PSU}(2)$ of $\left(\frac{\sqrt{-1}}{0} \quad 0 \quad \frac{0}{\sqrt{-1}}\right)$ and $\left(\frac{\sqrt{-1}}{0} - \frac{1}{\sqrt{-1}}\right)$ respectively.

Write $S_2 \cdot S_1 = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix}$. Then $f_1 := \frac{aw_1 + cw_2}{bw_1 + dw_2}$ is a developing map of a solution of $\triangle u + e^u = 4\pi(2n + 1)\delta_0$, by Lemma 1.2.6, and it is normalized of type I by construction. We have proved the “if” part of Theorem 0.4.1. The uniqueness assertion in the last sentence of Theorem 0.4.1 is clear from the correspondence we have established, between solutions of the mean field equation $\triangle u + e^u = 4\pi(2n + 1)\delta_0$ and Lamé equations $L_{n+1/2,B}w = 0$ such that no solution has logarithmic singularity.

**Corollary 3.5.1.** On any flat torus $C/\Lambda$, the mean field equation $\triangle u + e^u = 4\pi(2n + 1)\delta_0$ at most $n + 1$ solutions. It has exactly $n + 1$ solutions except for a finite number of conformal isomorphism classes of flat tori.

**Proof.** This is an immediate consequence of theorems 3.2 and 3.2 and 0.4.1.

**Corollary 3.5.2.** For $\eta = n + \frac{1}{2}$, the monodromy group $M$ of $L_{n+1/2,B}w = 0$ on an elliptic curve $C/\Lambda$ is finite if and only if it corresponds to a type I solution of the mean field equation $\triangle u + e^u = 4\pi(2n + 1)\delta_0$ on $C/\Lambda$ as in Theorem 0.4.1.

**Proof.** It was shown in [3, Thm. 2.3] that the monodromy group of the Lamé equation $L_{n+(1/2),B}w = 0$ is finite if and only if no solution of $L_{n+(1/2),B}w = 0$ has logarithmic singularity, and if so the projective monodromy group $L_{n+(1/2),B}w = 0$ is isomorphic to $(\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z})^2$. 

Example 3.6. By (3.4.3), it is easy to determine $p_n(B)$. For example,

$$p_1(B) = B^2 - \frac{3}{4}g_2,$$

$$p_2(B) = B^3 - 7g_2B + 20g_3.$$

For $\rho = 12\pi$, the two solutions to the mean field equation collapse to the same one precisely when $p_1(B)$ has multiple roots. This is the case if and only if $g_2 = 0$, which means that $\tau = e^{\pi i/3}$.

To see this from Example 2.10 is a little bit trickier. We may solve

$$(e_3 - e_1)^2 + 16(e_1 - e_2)(e_3 - e_2) = 0$$

in terms of the modular function

$$\lambda(\tau') = \frac{e_3 - e_2}{e_1 - e_2}$$

where $\tau' = \omega_2'/\omega_1' = 2\omega_2/\omega_1 = 2\tau$. A simple calculation leads to

$$\frac{(\lambda - 1)^2}{\lambda} = -16, \quad \text{i.e.} \quad \lambda^2 + 14\lambda + 1 = 0.$$

Then the corresponding $j$ invariant is

$$j(\tau') := 2^8 \frac{(\lambda^2 - \lambda + 1)^3}{\lambda^2(\lambda - 1)^2} = -2^8 15^3 \frac{\lambda}{(\lambda - 1)^2} = 2^4 3^3 5^3.$$

In general it would be difficult to determine $\tau'$ from $j$. Fortunately the value $j = 2^4 3^3 5^3$ appears in the famous list of elliptic curves with complex multiplications (see e.g. [25]) and it is known that

$$\tau' \equiv \sqrt{-3} \pmod{SL_2(\mathbb{Z})}.$$ 

Take $\tau$ in the fundamental region, then there is a unique choice of $T$, namely $\tau = \frac{1}{2}(1 + \sqrt{-3}) = e^{\pi \sqrt{-1}/3}$, which gives rise to

$$2\tau = 1 + \sqrt{-3} \equiv \sqrt{-3} = \tau' \pmod{SL_2(\mathbb{Z})}.$$

4. Singular Liouville equations with $\rho = 4\pi$ and modular forms

In §2, we discussed how to find all type I solutions by solving a system of polynomial equations which depends holomorphically on the moduli parameter $\tau$ of the torus $E_\tau = \mathbb{C}/\Lambda_\tau = \mathbb{C}/(\mathbb{Z} + \mathbb{Z}\tau)$, where $\tau$ varies in the upper-half plane $\mathbb{H}$. In this section, we consider the simplest case

$$\Delta u + e^u = 4\pi \delta_0 \quad \text{in} \ E_\tau,$$

and show that certain modular forms of level 4 are naturally to the solutions of (4.0.1) as $\tau$ varies. The general case with multiple singular sources will be considered in a subsequent work.
4.1. Notation.

- Let $\mathbb{H}$ be the upper-half plane. The group $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})$ operates transitively on $\mathbb{H}$ through the usual formula \( \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \cdot \tau = \frac{a\tau + b}{c\tau + d} \).

- Let $j(\gamma, \tau)$, be the 1-cocycle of $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})$ for its action on $\mathbb{H}$, defined by $j(\gamma; \tau) = c\tau + d$ for any $\gamma = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})$ and any $\tau \in \mathbb{H}$.

- Denote by $K_4$ the subgroup of $\text{PSU}(2) \subset \text{PSL}_2(\mathbb{C})$ isomorphic to $(\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z})^2$, consisting of the image in $\text{PSU}(2)$ of the four matrices
  \[
  \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} \sqrt{-1} & 0 \\ 0 & -\sqrt{-1} \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \sqrt{-1} \\ -\sqrt{-1} & 0 \end{pmatrix} \text{ and } \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.
  \]

We know from Lemma 1.3.1 (1b) that the centralizer subgroup of $K_4$ in $\text{PSL}_2(\mathbb{C})$ is equal to itself.

- Let $N(K_4)$ be the normalizer subgroup of $K_4$ in $\text{PSU}(2)$, which is also equal to the normalizer subgroup of $K_4$ in $\text{PSL}_2(\mathbb{C})$. We know from Lemma 1.3.1 (1d) that $N(K_4)$ is a semi-direct product of $K_4$ with $S_3$ and $K_4$ is isomorphic to $S_4$. Moreover the conjugation action induces an isomorphism from $N(K_4)/K_4$ to the permutation group of the three non-trivial elements of $K_4$.

Proposition 4.2. (a) For any $\tau \in \mathbb{H}$, there exists a unique normalized developing map $f(z; \tau)$ for the unique solution $u(z)$ of the equation (4.0.1) which has the following properties.

\[
\text{(4.2.1)} \quad \text{ord}_{z=a} f(z, \tau) = 0 \quad \forall a \neq \frac{1}{2} \quad \text{(mod } \Lambda) \]

\[
\text{(4.2.2)} \quad \frac{d}{dz} f(z; \tau)\big|_{z=0} = 0, \quad \frac{d^2}{dz^2} f(z; \tau)\big|_{z=0} \in \mathbb{C}^\times.
\]

\[
\text{(4.2.3)} \quad \text{The holomorphic map } f(z; \tau) : \mathbb{C} \to \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \text{ is etale outside } \Lambda_\tau.
\]

\[
\text{(4.2.4)} \quad \text{if } \tau \neq 0, \quad f(z + 1; \tau) = -f(z), \quad f(z + \tau; \tau) = 1/f(z; \tau) \quad \forall z \in \mathbb{C}.
\]

\[
\text{(4.2.5)} \quad f(-z; \tau) = f(z; \tau) \quad \forall z \in \mathbb{C}.
\]

\[
\text{(4.2.6)} \quad f\left(\frac{1}{2} \tau; \tau\right) = 1 \quad \forall z \in \mathbb{C}.
\]

\[
\text{(4.2.7)} \quad \text{ord}_{z=1/2} f(z; \tau) = 1
\]

\[
\text{(4.2.8)} \quad \text{ord}_{z=(1/2)+\tau} f(z; \tau) = -1
\]

(b) The function $f(z; \tau)$ in (a) is characterized by properties (4.2.1), (4.2.4), (4.2.6) and (4.2.7), i.e. if $h(z)$ is a meromorphic function on $\mathbb{C}$ which satisfies (4.2.1), (4.2.4), (4.2.6) and (4.2.7) for an element $\tau \in \mathbb{H}$, then $h(z) = f(z; \tau)$ for all $z \in \mathbb{C}$. 
(c) The function \( f(z; \tau) \) can be expressed in terms of Weierstrass elliptic functions:

\[
f(z; \tau) = -e^{\frac{1}{2} \eta(\tau; \Lambda_{\tau}) \cdot (1 + \tau)} \cdot \frac{\sigma\left(\frac{3}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right) \cdot \sigma\left(\frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right)}{\sigma\left(\frac{3}{4} - \frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right) \cdot \sigma\left(\frac{1}{4} + \frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right)}
\]

(4.2.9)

\[
\begin{align*}
&= -e^{\frac{1}{2} \eta(\tau; \Lambda_{\tau}) \cdot (1 + \tau)} \cdot \frac{\sigma^2\left(\frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right) \cdot \varphi\left(\frac{3}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right) \cdot \varphi\left(\frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right)}{\sigma^2\left(\frac{1}{4} + \frac{1}{2}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right) \cdot \varphi\left(\frac{3}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right) \cdot \varphi\left(\frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right) - \varphi\left(\frac{1}{4} + \frac{1}{2}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right) \cdot \varphi\left(\frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right)} \\
&= \frac{\varphi\left(\frac{3}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right) - \varphi\left(\frac{1}{4} + \frac{1}{2}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right)}{\varphi\left(\frac{3}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right) - \varphi\left(\frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right)} \cdot \frac{\varphi\left(\frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right) - \varphi\left(\frac{1}{4} + \frac{1}{2}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right)}{\varphi\left(\frac{3}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right) \cdot \varphi\left(\frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right) - \varphi\left(\frac{1}{4} + \frac{1}{2}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right) \cdot \varphi\left(\frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right)}
\end{align*}
\]

Proof. (a) For any \( \tau \in H \), we have proved that in §2 that equation (4.0.1) has a unique solution \( u(z; \tau), z \in E_{\tau} \) and there exists a normalized type I developing map \( f(z; \tau) \) for \( u(z; \tau) \). Because the centralizer subgroup of \( K_{4} \) in \( PSU(2) \) is \( K_{4} \) itself, normalized type I developing maps consists are of the form \( \gamma \cdot f \) with \( \gamma \in K_{4} \). Properties (4.2.1)–(4.2.5) are satisfied by all 4 normalized developing maps. The first part of (4.2.4) and (4.2.6) implies that \( f(z; \tau) \) has either a zero or a pole at \( z = \frac{1}{2} \). Changing \( f_{1} \) to \( \left( \begin{array}{c}
0 \\
\sqrt{-1} \tau
\end{array} \right) \cdot f \) if necessary, we may assume that \( f_{1}(\frac{1}{2}; \tau) = 0 \). Then \( f(z; \tau) \) has a simple zero at \( z = \frac{1}{2} \) by (4.2.1), and properties (4.2.7)–(4.2.8) hold for \( f \). Similarly properties (4.2.1), (4.2.4) and (4.2.5 for \( f \) imply that \( f\left(\frac{1}{2}; \tau\right) = \pm 1 \). Changing \( f \) to \( \left( \begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{-1} \\
0
\end{array} \right) \cdot f \) if necessary, we have produced a normalized developing map satisfying (4.2.1)–(4.2.8).

(b) Suppose that \( h(z) \) is a meromorphic function which satisfies properties (4.2.1), (4.2.4), (4.2.6) and (4.2.7). Then \( h(z) \) descends to a meromorphic function on \( \mathbb{C}/2\Lambda_{\tau} \) which has simple zeros at \( \pm \frac{1}{2} \mod 2\Lambda_{\tau} \), simple poles at \( \pm \frac{1}{2} + \tau \mod 2\Lambda_{\tau} \), and no zeros or poles elsewhere just like \( f(z, \tau) \). Therefore \( h(z) = c \cdot f(z; \tau) \) for some \( c \in \mathbb{C}^{\times} \). This constant \( c \) is equal to 1 by (4.2.7).

(c) For the first equality in (4.2.9), it suffices to show that the function

\[
\begin{align*}
e^{\frac{1}{2} \eta(\tau; \Lambda_{\tau}) \cdot (1 + \tau)} \cdot \frac{\sigma\left(\frac{3}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right) \cdot \sigma\left(\frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right)}{\sigma\left(\frac{3}{4} - \frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right) \cdot \sigma\left(\frac{1}{4} + \frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right)}
\end{align*}
\]

satisfies conditions (4.2.1), (4.2.4), (4.2.6) and (4.2.7) according to (b). The properties (4.2.1), (4.2.4) and (4.2.7) follows quickly from the translation law for the Weierstrass \( \sigma \)-function \( \sigma(z; \Lambda_{\tau}) \) and the fact that the entire function \( \sigma(z; \Lambda_{\tau}) \) has simple zeros at points of \( \Lambda_{\tau} \) does not vanish elsewhere. The condition (4.2.6) is equivalent to

\[
\frac{\sigma\left(\frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right)}{\sigma\left(-\frac{3}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}\right)} = -e^{-\frac{1}{2} \eta(\tau; \Lambda_{\tau}) \cdot (1 + \tau)},
\]
which follows from the transformation law of $\sigma(z; \Lambda_{\tau})$ with respect to the element $\tau \in \Lambda_{\tau}$. We have proved that the first equality

$$f(z; \tau) = e^{i \eta(\tau; \Lambda_{\tau}) \cdot (1 + \tau)} \cdot \frac{\sigma(\frac{z}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}) \cdot \sigma(\frac{z}{2}; \Lambda_{\tau})}{\sigma(\frac{z}{2}; \Lambda_{\tau}) \cdot \sigma(\frac{z}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau})}$$

in (4.2.9). The second equality in (4.2.9) follows from the classical formula

$$(4.2.10) \quad \varphi(u; \Lambda) - \varphi(v; \Lambda) = -\frac{\sigma(u + v; \Lambda) \cdot \sigma(u - v; \Lambda)}{\sigma^2(u; \Lambda) \cdot \sigma^2(v; \Lambda)}.$$ 

The last equality in (4.2.9) is equivalent to

$$(4.2.11) \quad \frac{\varphi(\frac{1}{2}; \Lambda_{\tau}) - \varphi(\frac{1}{4} + \frac{z}{2}; \Lambda_{\tau})}{\varphi(\frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}) - \varphi(\frac{1}{2}; \Lambda_{\tau})} = -e^{i \eta(\tau; \Lambda_{\tau}) \cdot (1 + \tau)} \cdot \frac{\sigma(\frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau})}{\sigma(\frac{1}{4} + \frac{z}{2}; \Lambda_{\tau})},$$

which is easily verified using (4.2.9) and the transformation law of the Weierstrass $\sigma$-function $\sigma(z; \Lambda_{\tau})$ with respect to the lattice $\Lambda_{\tau}$. We have proved part (c) of Proposition 4.2. \hfill \square

**Proposition 4.3.** Let $f(z; \tau)$ be the developing map specified in Proposition 4.2.

(a) There exists a unique group homomorphism $\psi : \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z}) \to \text{N}(K_4)$ such that

$$(4.3.1) \quad f(j(\gamma, \tau)^{-1} \cdot z; \gamma \cdot \tau) = \psi(\gamma) \cdot f(z; \tau) \quad \forall z \in \mathbb{C}, \forall \tau \in \mathbb{H}.$$ 

Here $\psi(\gamma) \cdot f(z; \tau) = \frac{af(z; \tau) + b}{bf(z; \tau) + d}$ if $\psi(\gamma)$ is the image of $\left( \begin{array}{cc} a & b \\ -d & b \end{array} \right)$ in $\text{PSU}(2)$.

(b) The homomorphism $\psi$ is surjective. The kernel $\text{Ker}(\psi)$ of $\psi$ is equal to the subgroup of $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})$ generated by $\pm I_2$ and the principal congruence subgroup $\Gamma(4)$ of level 4, consisting of all $\gamma \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})$ with $\gamma \equiv I_2 \pmod{4}$. The inverse image $\psi^{-1}(K_4)$ of $K_4$ under $\psi$ is the principal congruence subgroup $\Gamma(2)$. (In other words $\psi$ induces an isomorphism $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z}/4\mathbb{Z}) / \{\pm I_2\} \cong \text{N}(K_4)$, and also an isomorphism $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z}) \cong \text{N}(K_4) / K_4 \cong S_3$.)

(c) $\psi(\left( \begin{array}{cc} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{array} \right)) = \text{the image in } \text{PSU}(2) \text{ of the unitary matrix } \left( \begin{array}{cc} e^{\pi i / 4} & 0 \\ 0 & e^{-\pi i / 4} \end{array} \right)$, and $\psi(\left( \begin{array}{cc} 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{array} \right)) = \text{the image in } \text{PSU}(2) \text{ of } \sqrt{-1} \left( \begin{array}{cc} -1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 \end{array} \right).$

**Proof.** (a) It is easily checked that for each $\gamma \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})$, $f(j(\gamma, \tau)^{-1} \cdot z; \gamma \cdot \tau)$ is a developing map of the unique solution of (4.0.1), and that for each $\omega \in \Lambda_{\tau}$ we have $f(j(\gamma, \tau)^{-1} \cdot z + \omega; \gamma \cdot \tau) = \pm f(z; \tau) \pm^1$. Since $f(j(\gamma, \tau)^{-1} \cdot z + \omega; \gamma \cdot \tau)$ and $f(z; \tau)$ are developing maps for the same solution of (4.0.1), there exists an unique element $\psi(\gamma) \in \text{PSU}(2)$ such that the equality (4.3.1) holds. The fact that $f(j(\gamma, \tau)^{-1} \cdot z + \omega; \gamma \cdot \tau) = \pm f(z; \tau) \pm^1$ for each $\omega \in \Lambda_{\tau}$ means that $\psi(\gamma) \in \text{N}(K_4)$.
For all \( \gamma_1, \gamma_2 \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z}) \), we have
\[
f(j(\gamma_1 \gamma_2, \tau)^{-1}z; \gamma_1 \gamma_2 \cdot \tau) = f(j(\gamma_1, \gamma_2 \cdot \tau)^{-1} \cdot j(\gamma_2, \tau)^{-1} \cdot z; \gamma_1 \cdot (\gamma_2 \cdot \tau))
\]
\[
= \psi(\gamma_1) : f(j(\gamma_2, \tau)^{-1} \cdot z; \tau)
\]
\[
= \psi(\gamma_1) \cdot \psi(\gamma_2) \cdot f(z; \tau),
\]
therefore \( \psi(\gamma_1 \gamma_2) = \psi(\gamma_1) \cdot \psi(\gamma_2) \). We have proved statement (a).

(b) We get from (a) that for any \( \gamma = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \) in \( \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z}) \) we have
\[
(4.3.2) \ f(j(\gamma, \tau)^{-1}z+u \cdot \gamma \cdot \tau + v; \gamma \cdot \tau) = \psi(\gamma) \cdot f(z+(ua+vc) \tau+(ub+vd); \tau)
\]
for all \( u, v \in \mathbb{Q} \). For any given \( \gamma \in \Gamma(2) \), we have
\[
(ua+vc) \tau + (ub+vd) \equiv u \tau + v \quad \text{mod} \ 2 \Lambda_\tau \quad \forall (u, v) \in \mathbb{Z}^2,
\]
so the equality (4.3.2) for all \( (u, v) \in \mathbb{Z}^2 \) implies that \( \psi(\gamma) \) commutes with every element of \( K_4 \). Hence \( \psi(\gamma) \in K_4 \) for any \( \gamma \in \Gamma(2) \).

Suppose that \( \gamma \in \Gamma(4) \). Then
\[
(ua+vc) \tau + (ub+vd) \equiv u \tau + v \quad \text{mod} \ 2 \Lambda_\tau \quad \forall (u, v) \in \mathbb{Z}^2,
\]
and the equality (4.3.2) with \( z = 0 \) implies that
\[
(\psi(\gamma) \cdot f)(u \tau + v; \tau) = f(u \gamma \cdot \tau + v; \gamma \cdot \tau) \quad \forall (u, v) \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}^2.
\]
Because we already know that \( \psi(\gamma) \in K_4 \), the last equality implies that \( \psi(\gamma) = I_2 \). We have proved that \( \Gamma(4) \subset \text{Ker}(\psi) \).

Suppose that \( \gamma = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in \text{Ker}(\psi) \). As before we have
\[
(4.3.3) \ f(j(\gamma, \tau)^{-1}z+u \cdot \gamma \cdot \tau + v; \gamma \cdot \tau) = f(z+(ua+vc) \tau+(ub+vd); \tau)
\]
for all \( (u, v) \in \mathbb{Q}^2 \). The transformation law (4.2.4) for \( f(z; \tau) \) and the above equality for \( (u, v) \in \mathbb{Z}^2 \) imply that
\[
(ua+vc) \tau + (ub+vd) \equiv u \tau + v \quad \text{mod} \ 2 \Lambda_\tau \quad \forall (u, v) \in \mathbb{Z}^2,
\]
therefore \( \gamma \in \Gamma(2) \). The equation (4.3.3) with \( z = 0 \) and \( u, v \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z} \) tells us that
\[
 f(u \gamma \cdot \tau + v; \gamma \cdot \tau) = f((ua+vc) \tau+(ub+vd); \tau) \quad \forall (u, v) \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}^2.
\]
The properties (4.2.4), (4.2.6) and (4.2.7) imply that
\[
(ua+vc) \tau + (ub+vd) \equiv \pm (u \tau + v) \quad \text{mod} \ 2 \Lambda_\tau \quad \forall (u, v) \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}^2,
\]
therefore \( \gamma \in \{ \pm I_2 \} \cdot \Gamma(4) \). We have proved the statement (b).
We want to compute $T := \psi\left(\begin{smallmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{smallmatrix}\right)$ and $S := \psi\left(\begin{smallmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{smallmatrix}\right)$. The defining relation for $T$ is

\begin{equation}
(4.3.4) \quad f(z; \tau + 1) = T \cdot f(z; \tau) \quad \forall z \in \mathbb{C}, \forall \tau \in \mathbb{H}.
\end{equation}

Substituting $z$ by $z + \omega$ in (4.3.4) with $\omega \in \Lambda_\tau$ gives us two equalities

\[ T \cdot \begin{pmatrix} \sqrt{-\tau} & 0 \\ 0 & -\sqrt{-\tau} \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} \sqrt{-\tau} & 0 \\ 0 & -\sqrt{-\tau} \end{pmatrix} \cdot T \quad \text{and} \quad \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \sqrt{-\tau} \\ \sqrt{-\tau} & 0 \end{pmatrix} \cdot T = T \cdot \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \]

in PSU(2). A easy computation with the above equalities reveals that $\gamma \in \left( e^{i\sqrt{-\tau}/4} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, e^{-i\sqrt{-\tau}/4} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right)$, i.e. $f(z; \tau + 1) = \pm \sqrt{-1} \cdot f(z; \tau) \pm 1$. Since $f\left(\frac{1}{2}; \tau\right) = f\left(\frac{1}{2}; \tau + 1\right) = 0$, the possibilities narrow down to $f(z; \tau + 1) = \pm \sqrt{-1} \cdot f(z; \tau)$. It remains to determine the sign, which amounts to computing $f\left(\frac{\tau + 1}{2}; \tau\right)$ From the first equality in (4.2.9) we get

\[ f\left(\frac{\tau + 1}{2}; \tau\right) = -e^{i\frac{1}{2} \eta(\tau; \Lambda_\tau)} \cdot \frac{\sigma\left(\frac{\tau + 1}{2}; \Lambda_\tau\right)}{\sigma\left(\frac{-\tau + 1}{2}; \Lambda_\tau\right) \cdot \sigma\left(\frac{\tau + 1}{4}; \Lambda_\tau\right)} \]

\[ = e^{i\frac{1}{2} \left[ \eta(\tau; \Lambda_\tau) - \eta(1; \Lambda_\tau) \right]} \]

\[ = -\sqrt{-1} \]

The second equality in the displayed equation above follows from the transformation law of the Weierstrass $\sigma$-function, while the last equality follows from the Legendre relation $\eta(1; \Lambda_\tau) \tau - \eta(\tau; \Lambda_\tau) = 2\pi \sqrt{-1}$. We conclude that

\[ f(z; \tau + 1) = \sqrt{-1} \cdot f(z; \tau), \]

which gives the formula for $T = \psi\left(\begin{smallmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 \end{smallmatrix}\right)$.

Finally let’s compute $S$. The defining relation for $S$ is

\[ f\left(-\frac{1}{\tau} z; -\frac{1}{\tau}\right) = S \cdot f(z; \tau) \]

The functional equation for $z \to z + \omega$ with $\omega \in \Lambda_\tau$ gives us two equalities

\[ S \cdot \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \cdot S \quad \text{and} \quad \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix} \cdot S = S \cdot \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \]

in PSU(2). A straight-forward computation gives four possible solutions of $S$, which translates into

\[ f\left(-\frac{1}{\tau} z; -\frac{1}{\tau}\right) = \pm \frac{f(z; \tau) + 1}{f(z; \tau) - 1} \quad \text{or} \quad \pm \frac{f(z; \tau) - 1}{f(z; \tau) + 1} \]

The requirement that $f\left(-\frac{1}{2\tau}; -\frac{1}{\tau}\right) = 1$ eliminates two possibilities: the two $\pm$ signs above are both $-1$. The requirement that $f\left(\frac{1}{2}; -\frac{1}{\tau}\right) = 0$ shows that

\[ f\left(-\frac{1}{\tau} z; -\frac{1}{\tau}\right) = -\frac{f(z; \tau) - 1}{f(z; \tau) + 1} \]

We have proved the statement (c).
Recall that the quotient $\Gamma(4) \backslash \mathbb{H}$ has a natural structure as (the $\mathbb{C}$-points of) a smooth affine algebraic curve $Y(4)$. The compactified modular curve $X(4)$ is the smooth compactification $X(4)$ of $Y(4)$. As a topological space $X(4)$ is naturally identified as the quotient by $\Gamma(4)$ of $\mathbb{H} \sqcup \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{Q})$; the topology of the latter is described in [48, p. 10]. The complement $X(4) \setminus Y(4)$, called the cusps of $X(4)$, is a set with 6 elements naturally identified with $\Gamma(4) \backslash \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{Q})$, or equivalently the set $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{Z}/4\mathbb{Z})$ of $\mathbb{Z}/4\mathbb{Z}$-valued points of the scheme $\mathbb{P}^1$ over $\mathbb{Z}$. It is well-known that $X(4)$ has genus zero; c.f. [48, (1.6.4), p. 23].

The general discussion in §2, of which the present situation is the special case $\rho = 4\pi$, implies that the function $\tau \mapsto f(0; \tau)$ is holomorphic on $\mathbb{H}$. Proposition 4.3 implies that the holomorphic function $\tau \mapsto f(0; \tau)$ on $\mathbb{H}$ descends to a holomorphic function $h_{X(4)}$ on the open modular curve $Y(4)$. The next corollary says that $h_{X(4)}$ is a Hauptmodul for $X(4)$.

**Corollary 4.4.** (a) The holomorphic function $h_{X(4)}$ on $Y(4)$ is a meromorphic function on $X(4)$ which defines a biholomorphic isomorphism $h_{X(4)}^\ast$ from $X(4)$ to $\mathbb{P}^1$. This isomorphism $h_{X(4)}^\ast$ is equivariant with respect to $\psi$, for the action of $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})/\{\pm \text{Id}_2\} \cdot \Gamma(4)$ on $X(4)$ and the action of $\text{N}(K_4)$ on $\mathbb{P}^1$.

(b) We have explicit formulas for $h_{X(4)}(\tau) = f(0, \tau)$:

\begin{equation}
(4.4.1) \quad h(\tau) = -e^{2\pi i \eta(\tau; \Lambda_{\tau}) (1+\tau)} \frac{\sigma^2(\frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau})}{\sigma^2(\frac{1}{4} + \frac{1}{2}; \Lambda_{\tau})} \frac{\wp(\frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}) - \wp(\frac{1}{4} + \frac{1}{2}; \Lambda_{\tau})}{\wp(\frac{1}{4}; \Lambda_{\tau}) - \wp(\frac{1}{2}; \Lambda_{\tau})}
\end{equation}

(c) The isomorphism $h_{X(4)}^\ast$ sends (the image of) the standard cusp “$\infty \cdot \sqrt{-1}$”, that is the point $\infty \in \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{Q}) \subset$, to the point $0 \in \mathbb{P}^1$.

**Proof.** The formula (4.4.1) in (b) follows immediately from the formulas (4.2.9) for $f(z; \tau)$.

There are two ways to see that $h_{X(4)}$ is a meromorphic function on $X(4)$. One can use either of the two formulas in (b) and classical results on Weierstrass elliptic functions. The other way is to use Picard’s theorem: we know that $f(0, \tau) \neq 0$ for all $\tau \in \mathbb{H}$. The $\psi$-equivariance of $f(0, \tau)$ implies that

\[ f(0, \tau) \notin \{ \pm 1, \pm \sqrt{-1}, 0, \infty \} \quad \forall \, \tau \in \mathbb{H}, \]

for the set $\{ \pm 1, \pm \sqrt{-1}, 0, \infty \}$ is the orbit of $\text{N}(K_4)$ on $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$. So $h_{X(4)}$ cannot have essential singularities at any of the cusps.

From the meager information in the previous paragraph we can already conclude that the holomorphic map $h_{X(4)}$ from $X(4)$ to $\mathbb{P}^1$ has degree 1: Because $X(4)$ has exactly 6 cusps, the map $h_{X(4)}$ is totally ramified over the six points of $\{ \pm 1, \pm \sqrt{-1}, 0, \infty \} \subset \mathbb{P}^1$, and the Hurwitz formula forces the degree of $h_{X(4)}$ to be 1.

The fact that $h_{X(4)}$ sends the standard cusp $\infty \cdot \sqrt{-1}$ to 0 can be seen by an easy computation, using the formula (4.4.1) and the $q$-expansion of the
Weierstrass $\wp$-function
\[
\frac{1}{(2\pi \sqrt{-1})^2} \wp(z; \Lambda_\tau) = \frac{1}{2} + \frac{q_z}{(1 - q_z)^2} + \sum_{n, \mu \geq 1} n q_z^{\mu n} (q_z^n + q_z^{-n}) - \sum_{m, \mu \geq 1} n q_z^{\mu n}
\]
in the range $|q_z| < |q_z|^{-1}$, where $q_z = e^{2\pi \sqrt{-1} \tau}$ and $q_z = e^{2\pi \sqrt{-1} z}$ for $\tau \in \mathbb{H}$ and $z \in \mathbb{C}$.

**Remark 4.4.1.** (a) The fact that $f(0; \tau)$ is a Hauptmodul for the principal congruence subgroup $\Gamma(4)$ is classical; see [49, p. 176]. We have not been able to locate in the literature the transformation formula in Proposition 4.3, but formula is not difficult to prove starting from the formula (4.2.9) for $f(z; \tau)$. Perhaps the only new thing here is the phenomenon that type I solutions of the Liouville equation $\triangle u + e^u = 4\pi(2n + 1)\delta$ on elliptic curves produce modular forms for $\Gamma(4)$ in an organized way.

(b) Clearly the function $f(0; \tau)$ is a **modular unit** in the sense that it is a unit in the integral closure of $\mathbb{C}[j]$ in $\mathbb{C}(X(4))$, where $j$ is the $j$-invariant and $\mathbb{C}(X(4))$ is the function field of the modular curve $X(4)$ over $\mathbb{C}$. It turns out that $f(0; \tau)$ is actually a unit of the integral closure of $\mathbb{Q}[j]$ in the function field of the modular curve $X(4)_{\mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{-1})}$ over $\mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{-1})$; see [29, Thm. 1, p. 189].

**Corollary 4.5.** For $k = 0, 1, 2, \ldots \in \mathbb{N}$, let $a_k(\tau)$ be the holomorphic function on $\mathbb{H}$ defined by
\[
(4.5.1) \quad f(z; \tau) = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} a_k(\tau) z^k, \quad z \in \mathbb{C}, \ \tau \in \mathbb{H},
\]
where $f(z; \tau)$ is the developing map in Proposition 4.2. For each $k \geq 0$, $a_k(\tau)$ is a holomorphic function on $\mathbb{H}$ and defines a modular form of weight $k$ for the congruence subgroup $\Gamma(4)$ in the sense that
\[
a_k(\gamma \cdot \tau) = j(\gamma, \tau)^k \cdot a_k(\tau) \quad \forall \gamma \in \Gamma(4).
\]
Moreover $a_k(\tau)$ is meromorphic at the cusps of $X(4)$ for every $k \in \mathbb{N}$.

**Proof.** The transformation formula (4.5.1) follows immediately from Proposition 4.3. The fact that $f(z; \tau)$ is holomorphic on $\mathbb{C} \times \mathbb{H}$ implies that $a_k(\tau)$ is a holomorphic function on $\mathbb{H}$. The last assertion that $a_k(\tau)$ is meromorphic at the cusps is most easily seen from the explicit formula (4.2.9) for $f(z; \tau)$.

**4.6. Generalization to $\rho = (2n + 1)4\pi$.** The considerations leading to the transformation formula (4.3.1) with respect to $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})$ for the normalized developing map $f(z; \tau)$ for the unique solution of $\triangle u + e^u = 4\pi \cdot \delta_0$ on $\mathbb{C}/\Lambda_\tau$ specified in Proposition 4.2 can be extended for all type I cases. In 4.6.1–4.6.5 below we formulate the basic geometric structures which lead to a generalization of (4.3.1), and ends with an unsolved irreducibility and monodromy question in 4.6.6.
Definition 4.6.1. Let \( n \) be a non-negative integer.

1. Let \( \mathcal{M}_n \) be the set of all pairs \((u(z), \tau)\), where \( \tau \in \mathbb{H} \) and \( u(z) \) is a solution of the mean field equation \( \Delta u + e^u = 4(2n + 1)\pi \cdot \delta_0 \) on the elliptic curve \( \mathbb{C}/\Lambda_\tau \).

   Let \( \pi_n : \mathcal{M}_n \to \mathbb{H} \) be the map which sends a typical element \((u(z), \tau)\) in \( \mathcal{M}_n \) to the point \( \tau \) of the upper-half plane \( \mathbb{H} \). Note that \( \pi_n \) is surjective according to Theorem 0.4.

2. Let \( \mathcal{D}_n \) be the set of all \((f(z), \tau)\), where \( \tau \) is an element of \( \mathbb{H} \) and \( f(z) \) is a developing map of a solution of \( \Delta u + e^u = 4(2n + 1)\pi \cdot \delta_0 \) on the elliptic curve \( \mathbb{C}/\Lambda_\tau \) whose monodromy group is equal to the standard Klein’s four subgroup \( K_4 \subset \text{PSU}(2) \) in the notation of 4.1.

   Let \( p_n : \mathcal{D}_n \to \mathcal{M}_n \) be the map which sends a typical element \((f(z), \tau) \in \mathcal{D}_n \) to the element \((\log 8|f'(z)|^2/(1+|f(z)|^2)\pi, \tau) \) of \( \mathcal{M}_n \), and let \( \pi_n = \pi_n \circ p_n : \mathcal{D}_n \to \mathbb{H}_n \) be the natural projection map which sends each element \((f(z), \tau) \in \mathcal{D}_n \) to \( \tau \).

3. Let \( \mathcal{D}'_n \) be the subset of \( \mathcal{D}_n \) consisting of all pairs \((f(z), \tau) \in \mathcal{D}' \) such that and \( f(z) \) is a normalized type I developing map for an element \((u(z), \tau) \in \mathcal{M}_n \) satisfying the monodromy condition that \( f(z + 1) = -f(z) \) and \( f(z + \tau) = f(z)^{-1} \) for all \( z \in \mathbb{C} \). Let \( p'_n : \mathcal{D}' \to \mathcal{M}_n \) be the restriction to \( \mathcal{D}'_n \) of \( p_n \), and let \( \pi'_n = \pi_n \circ p'_n : \mathcal{D}' \to \mathbb{H}_n \) be the restriction to \( \mathcal{D}'_n \) of \( \pi_n \).

4. Define \( \phi_n : \mathcal{M}_n \to \mathcal{D}'_n \) be the map which sends a typical element \((u(z), \tau) \in \mathcal{M}_n \) to the element \((f(z), \tau) \in \mathcal{D}'_n \) such that \( f\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) = 0 \) and \( f\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) = 1 \).

   This map \( \phi_n \) is well-defined because for each normalized type I developing map \((f(z), \tau) \in \mathcal{D}'_n \), we have

   \[
   f\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) = 0 \text{ or } \infty, \quad f\left(\frac{3}{2}\right) = \pm 1;
   \]

   these four possibilities are permuted simply transitively by the action of \( K_4 \) through fractional linear transformations.

Lemma 4.6.2. Let \( \mathcal{M}_n, \mathcal{D}_n, \mathcal{D}'_n \) be as in 4.6.1 above.

1. Each of the three sets \( \mathcal{M}_n, \mathcal{D}_n, \mathcal{D}'_n \) has a natural structure as a one-dimensional complex manifold such that the maps \( \pi_n : \mathcal{M}_n \to \mathbb{H}, \pi'_n : \mathcal{D}'_n \to \mathbb{H} \) are finite surjective holomorphic maps. Moreover there exists a discrete subset \( \mathcal{R}_n \subset \mathbb{H} \) which stable under the natural action of the modular group \( SL_2(\mathbb{Z}) \) on \( \mathbb{H} \) with \(|SL_2(\mathbb{Z}) \setminus \mathcal{R}_n| < \infty \), such that \( \pi_n, \pi'_n \) and \( \pi'_n \) are unramified over the complement \( \mathbb{H} \setminus \mathcal{R}_n \) of \( \mathcal{R}_n \).

2. The action of the finite group \( \text{N}(K_4) \) on \( \mathcal{D}_n \) via linear fraction transformations is holomorphic, making \( p_n : \mathcal{D}_n \to \mathcal{M}_n \) an unramified Galois cover with group \( \text{N}(K_4) \). Similarly the map \( p'_n : \mathcal{D}'_n \to \mathcal{M}_n \) is a holomorphic unramified Galois cover for the action of the standard Klein’s four group \( K_4 \) in \( \text{PSU}(2) \).
(3) The map \( \phi_n : M_n \to \mathbb{D}'_n \) is a holomorphic section of \( \pi'_n : \mathbb{D}'_n \to M_n \).

Consequently \( p_n : \mathbb{D}_n \to M_n \) is a trivial Galois cover with group \( N(K_4) \) and \( p'_n : \mathbb{D}'_n \to M_n \) is a trivial Galois cover with group with group \( K_4 \).

**Proof.** The statement (1) for \( \pi_n : M_n \to \mathbb{H} \) follows from theorems 0.4 and 3.2. The part of statement (1) for \( \tilde{\pi}_n : \mathbb{D}_n \to \mathbb{H} \) and \( \tilde{\pi}'_n : \mathbb{D}'_n \to \mathbb{H} \) is a consequence of theorems 0.4 and 3.2 and the group-theoretic lemmas 1.3.1 and 1.3.2.

The action of \( N(K_4) \) on \( \mathbb{D}_n \) is easily seen to be continuous and is simply transitive on every fiber of \( p_n : \mathbb{D}_n \to M_n \). The first part of statement (2) follows. The second part of (2) is proved similarly.

The fact that \( p'_n \circ \phi_n = \text{id}_{\mathbb{M}_n} \) is immediate from the definition. It is not difficult to see that \( \phi_n \) is continuous, which implies that \( \phi_n \) is holomorphic. The first statement in (3) is proved; the rest of (3) follows. \( \square \)

**Definition 4.6.3.** Define compatible actions of the modular group \( SL_2(\mathbb{Z}) \) on \( M_n \) and \( \mathbb{D}_n \) as follows. For any element \( \gamma \in SL_2(\mathbb{Z}) \), any element \( (u(z), \tau) \in M_n \), and any element \( (f(z), \tau) \in \mathbb{D}_n \) such that \( p_n((f(z), \tau)) = (u(z), \tau) \),

- \( \gamma \) sends \( (u(z), \tau) \in M_n \) to the element
  \[
  (u(j(\gamma, \tau) \cdot z) + \log(|j(\gamma, \tau)|^2), \gamma \cdot \tau) \in M_n,
  \]
- and \( \gamma \) sends \( (f(z), \tau) \in \mathbb{D}_n \) to the element
  \[
  (f(j(\gamma, \tau) \cdot z), \gamma \cdot \tau) \in \mathbb{D}_n.
  \]

It is easy to check that \( p_n : \mathbb{D}_n \to M_n \) is \( SL_2(\mathbb{Z}) \)-equivariant, i.e.

\[
p_n(\gamma \cdot (f(z), \tau)) = \gamma \cdot p_n((f(z), \tau))
\]

for every \( \gamma \in SL_2(\mathbb{Z}) \), and every element \( (f(z), \tau) \in \mathbb{D}_n \).

**Lemma 4.6.4.** (1) The actions of \( SL_2(\mathbb{Z}) \) on \( \mathbb{D}_n \) and \( M_n \) defined in 4.6.3 are holomorphic.

(2) The holomorphic maps

\[
p_n : \mathbb{D}_n \to M_n, \quad \pi_n : M_n \to \mathbb{H} \quad \text{and} \quad \tilde{\pi}_n = \pi_n \circ p_n : \mathbb{D}_n \to \mathbb{H}
\]

are equivariant for the \( SL_2(\mathbb{Z}) \)-actions on \( \mathbb{D}_n, M_n \) and \( \mathbb{H} \).

(3) The actions of \( SL_2(\mathbb{Z}) \) and \( N(K_4) \) on \( \mathbb{D}_n \) commute.

(4) The submanifold \( \mathbb{D}'_n \subset \mathbb{D}_n \) is stable under the action of the principal congruence subgroup \( \Gamma(2) \) of level 2 in \( SL_2(\mathbb{Z}) \).

**Proof.** That the action of \( SL_2(\mathbb{Z}) \) on \( \mathbb{D}_n \) and \( M_n \) is continuous can be verified without difficulty, from which (1) follows. The proofs of statements (2)–(4) are easy and omitted. \( \square \)

**Corollary 4.6.5.** Suppose that \( M_n \) is connected.
(a) There exists a group homomorphism
\[ \psi_n : \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z}) \to N(K_4) \]
such that
\[ \phi_n(\gamma \cdot (f(z), \tau)) = \psi_n(\gamma) \cdot \phi_n((f(z), \tau)) \]
for all \( \gamma \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z}) \) and all elements \((f(z), \tau) \in \mathbb{M}_n\).

(b) The homomorphism \( \psi_n \) in (a) satisfies
\[ \Gamma(4) \subseteq \text{Ker}(\psi_n) \quad \text{and} \quad \psi_n(\Gamma(2)) \subseteq K_4. \]

4.6.6. Questions. (a) Is \( \mathbb{M}_n \) connected? \(^{22}\)
(b) Suppose that \( \mathbb{M}_n \) is connected. What is the Galois group of the ramified cover \( \pi_n : \mathbb{M}_n \to \mathbb{H}_n \)? Is it the symmetric group \( S_n \)?

5. Type II solutions: Evenness and Green’s functions

In this section we give the proof of Theorem 0.6 concerning type II solutions. By Proposition 1.6, we may assume that \( \rho = 8n\pi \) \((l = 2n)\). Let \( u \) be a solution of (0.1.3), and \( f \) be a developing map of \( u \). We recall that \( u_\lambda \) in (0.2.4) is a one parameter family of solutions of (0.1.3).

5.1. Evenness of solutions for \( \rho = 8n\pi \).

**Theorem 5.2.** There is a unique even solution within each normalized type II family of solutions of the singular Liouville equation \( \triangle u + e^u = 8n\pi \delta_0 \) on a torus \( E, n \), where \( n \) is a positive integer. In other words for any normalized type II developing map \( f \) of a solution \( u \) of the above equation, there exists a unique \( \lambda \in \mathbb{R} \) such that the solution

\[ u_\lambda(z) = \log \frac{e^{2\lambda|f'(z)|^2}}{(1 + e^{2\lambda|f(z)|^2})^2} \]

of the same equation satisfies \( u_\lambda(-z) = u_\lambda(z) \ \forall z \in \mathbb{C} \).

**Proof.** Let \( f \) be a normalized type II developing map of a solution \( u \) of (0.1.3). We must show that there exists a unique \( \lambda \in \mathbb{R} \) such that \( f_\lambda := e^{\lambda \cdot f(z)} \) satisfies \( |f_\lambda(-z) \cdot f_\lambda(z)| = 1 \) on \( \mathbb{C} \).

Let \( g := f'/f \), the logarithmic derivative of \( f \); it is a meromorphic function on \( E = \mathbb{C}/\Lambda \) because \( f \) is normalized of type II. It suffice to show that \( g \) is even, for then

\[ f(-z) = f(0) \exp \int_0^{-z} g(w) \, dw = \frac{f(0)^2}{f(z)}, \]

i.e. \( f(z) \cdot f(-z) \) is a non-zero constant.

\(^{22}\)We think the answer is very likely “yes”, but we don’t have a proof.
We know from Lemma 1.3.7 that $f$ is a local unit at points of $\Lambda$ and $g$ is a meromorphic function on $E$ which has a zero of order $2n$ at $0 \in E$, no other zeros and $2n$ simple poles on $E$. Moreover the residue of $g$ is equal to $1$ at $n$ of the simple poles of $g$, and equal to $-1$ at the other $n$ simple poles.

Denote by $P_1, \ldots, P_n$ the $n$ simples poles of $g$ with residue $1$ on $E = \mathbb{C}/\Lambda$, corresponding to zeros of the developing map $f$, and let $Q_1, \ldots, Q_n$ be the $n$-simple poles of $g$ with residue $-1$, corresponding to simple poles of $f$. Let $p_1, \ldots, p_n \in \mathbb{C}$ be representatives of $P_1, \ldots, P_n \in \mathbb{C}/\Lambda$; similarly let $q_1, \ldots, q_n \in \mathbb{C}$ be representatives of $Q_1, \ldots, Q_n \in \mathbb{C}/\Lambda$. The condition on the poles of $g$ allows us to express $g$ in terms of the Weierstrass $\zeta$-function:

\begin{equation}
(5.2.1) \quad g(z) = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \zeta(z - p_i) - \sum_{i=1}^{n} \zeta(z - q_i) + \sum_{i=1}^{n} \zeta(p_i) - \sum_{i=1}^{n} \zeta(q_i)
\end{equation}

for a unique constant $c$, because $g(z) - \sum_{i=1}^{n} \zeta(z - p_i) + \sum_{i=1}^{n} \zeta(z - q_i)$ is a meromorphic holomorphic function on $E$. Of course the constant $c$ is completely determined by the elements $p_1, \ldots, p_n; q_1, \ldots, q_n \in \mathbb{C}$:

\[ c = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \zeta(p_i) - \sum_{i=1}^{n} \zeta(q_i). \]

It remains to analyze the condition that $g(z)$ has a zero of order $2n$ at $0 \in E$, i.e.

\begin{equation}
(5.2.2) \quad 0 = -g^{(r)}(0) = -\frac{d^r g}{dz^r} \bigg|_{z=0} = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \psi^{(r-1)}(p_i) - \sum_{i=1}^{n} \psi^{(r-1)}(q_i)
\end{equation}

for $r = 1, \ldots, 2n - 1$ because

\[-g^{(r)}(z) = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \psi^{(r-1)}(z - p_i) - \sum_{i=1}^{n} \psi^{(r-1)}(z - q_i).\]

Only the conditions that $g^{(2s+1)}(0) = 0$ for $s = 0, 1, \ldots, n - 1$ will be used for the proof of Theorem 5.2. The vanishing of the even-order derivatives of $g$ will explored in the proof of Theorem 5.6.

By Lemma 5.4 below, relations (5.2.2) for $r = 1, 3, 5, \ldots, 2n - 1$ implies that the sets $\{\varphi(p_1), \ldots, \varphi(p_n)\}$ and $\{\varphi(q_1), \ldots, \varphi(q_n)\}$ are equal as sets with multiplicities. Because $P_1, \ldots, P_n; Q_1, \ldots, Q_n$ are $2n$ distinct points on $E$, it follows that $\varphi(p_i) \neq \varphi(p_j)$ whenever $i \neq j$ and $\{Q_1, \ldots, Q_n\} = \{-P_1, \ldots, -P_n\}$ as subsets of $E \setminus \{0\}$ with $n$ elements. From the expression 5.2.1 of $g$ and the fact that $\zeta(z)$ is an even function on $\mathbb{C}$ one sees that $g(z)$ is even. We have proved Theorem 5.2 modulo the elementary Lemma 5.4.

We record the following statements from the proof of Theorem 5.2.

**Corollary 5.3.** Let $f$ be a normalize type II developing map of a solution $u$ of the equation $\triangle u + e^u = 8n\pi \delta_0$ for a positive integer $n$. Then the zeros of $f$ correspond to $n$ elements $P_1, \ldots, P_n \in E \setminus \{0\}$ and the poles of $f$ $\{q_1, \ldots, q_n\}$
correspond to \( n \) elements \( P_1, \ldots, P_n \in E \setminus \{0\} \). Moreover the following statements hold.

(a) \( \{Q_1, \ldots, Q_n\} = \{-P_1, \ldots, -P_n\} \) as subsets of \( E \setminus \{0\} \) with \( n \) elements.

(b) \( \varphi'(p_i) \neq 0 \), or equivalently \( P_i \) is not a 2-torsion point of \( E \), for \( i = 1, \ldots, n \).

(c) \( \varphi(p_i) \neq \varphi(p_j) \) for any \( i, j = 1, \ldots, n \) such that \( i \neq j \).

**Lemma 5.4.** (a) For each positive integer \( j \), there exists a polynomial \( h_j(X) \in C[X] \) of degree \( j + 1 \) such that

\[
\varphi^{(2j)}(z) := \left( \frac{d}{dz} \right)^{2j} \varphi(z) = h_j(\varphi(z))
\]
as meromorphic functions on \( C \).

(b) For every symmetric polynomial \( P(X_1, \ldots, X_n) \in C[X_1, \ldots, X_n] \) in \( n \) variables \( X_1, \ldots, X_n \), there exists a polynomial \( Q(W_1, \ldots, W_n) \in C[W_1, \ldots, W_n] \) in \( n \) variables \( W_1, \ldots, W_n \) such that

\[
P(\varphi(z_1), \ldots, \varphi(z_n)) = Q\left( \sum_{i=1}^{n} \varphi(z_i), \sum_{i=1}^{n} \varphi^{(2)}(z_i), \sum_{i=1}^{n} \varphi^{(4)}(z_i), \ldots, \sum_{i=1}^{n} \varphi^{(2n-2)}(z_i) \right)
\]
as meromorphic functions on \( C^n \).

**Proof.** Taking the derivative of the Weierstrass equation

\[
\varphi'(z)^2 = 4\varphi(z)^3 - g_2\varphi(z) - g_3,
\]
and divide both sides by \( 2\varphi'(z) \), we get

\[
\varphi^{(2)}(z) = 6\varphi(z)^2 - \frac{1}{2}g_2.
\]

An easy induction shows that \( \varphi^{(2j)}(z) \) is equal to \( h_j(\varphi(z)) \) for a polynomial \( h_j(X) \in C[X] \) of degree \( j + 1 \) and the coefficient \( a_j \) of \( X^{j+1} \) is positive. In fact one sees that \( a_j = (2j + 1)! \) when one compares the coefficient of \( z^{2j-2} \) in the Laurent series expansion of \( \varphi^{(2j)}(z) \) and \( h_j(\varphi(z)) \). We have proved the statement (a). The statement (b) follows from the fact that every symmetric polynomial in \( C[X_1, \ldots, X_n] \) is a polynomial of the Newton polynomials \( p_1(X_1, \ldots, X_n), \ldots, p_n(X_1, \ldots, X_n) \), where \( p_j(X_1, \ldots, X_n) := \sum_{i=1}^{n} X_i^j \) for \( j = 1, \ldots, n \). \( \square \)

5.5. **Green/algebraic system for \( \rho = 8n\pi \).** Let \( u \) be a type II even solution of the singular Liouville equation \( \triangle u + e^u = 8n\pi \delta_0 \) on a torus \( E = C/\Lambda \), where \( n \) is a positive integer. As before let \( f \) be a normalized developing map of \( u \) and let \( g = (\log f)' = f'/f \). Let \( p_1, \ldots, p_n \in C \) be the simple zeros of \( f \) modulo \( \Lambda \) and let \( -p_1, \ldots, -p_n \) be the simple poles of \( f \) modulo \( \Lambda \) as in Corollary 5.3. Let \( P_1 = p_1 \mod \Lambda, \ldots, P_n = p_n \mod \Lambda \); they are exactly the blow-up points of the scaling family \( u_\lambda \) of solutions of \( \triangle u + e^u = 8n\pi \delta_0 \).
5.5.1. Two approaches to the configuration of blow-up points. We will investigate the constraints on the configuration of the points $P_1, \ldots, P_n$ with two approaches outlined below. The plans are executed in 5.6 and 5.7 respectively.

A. In the first approach we have the relations 5.2.2 for $r = 2, 4, \ldots, 2n - 2$ and also the condition that the period integrals of the meromorphic differential $g(z) \, dz$ on $E$ are purely imaginary; the latter comes directly from the assumption that the image of the monodromy of the type II developing map lies in the diagonal maximal torus of $\text{PSU}(2)$. The first $n - 1$ conditions translates into a system of polynomial equations in the coordinates $\wp(t)$ of the elements in $\wp(t)$ blow-up points, those satisfying the non-degeneracy condition

$$\sum_j \wp'(p_j) = \wp'(p_i), \quad \forall r = 0, \ldots, n - 2,$$

while the monodromy constraint becomes

$$\frac{\partial G}{\partial z}(p_i) = 0$$

where $G$ is the Green’s function on $E$ as in 0.1.1.

The method used in this approach also shows that $n + 1$ equations (5.5.1) and (5.5.2) are also sufficient: if $P_1 = p_1 \text{ mod } \Lambda, \ldots, P_n = p_n \text{ mod } \Lambda = n$ elements in $E$ with distinct $x$-coordinates $\wp_1(p_1), \ldots, \wp_n(p_n)$ satisfying equations (5.5.1) and (5.5.2) and none of $P_1, \ldots, P_n$ is a 2-torsion point of $E$, then there exists a normalized type II developing map $f$ for a solution of $\Delta u + e^u = 8n\pi \delta_0$ such that $p_1, \ldots, p_n$ is a set of representatives of the zeros of $f$ modulo $\Lambda$.

B. In the second approach, results on blow-up solutions of a mean field equation on a Riemann surface provides the following constraints

$$\frac{\partial G}{\partial z}(p_i) = \sum_{1 \leq j \leq n, j \neq i} \frac{\partial G}{\partial z}(p_i - p_j), \quad \text{for } i = 1, 2, \ldots, n,$$

on the blow-up points $P_1, \ldots, P_n$.

5.5.2. We will see in 5.7 that the system of equations 5.5.3 is equivalent to the combination of (5.5.2) and the following system of equations

$$\sum_{j \neq i} \wp'(p_i) + \wp'(p_j) = \wp'(p_i) - \wp(p_i) = 0, \quad \text{for } i = 1, \ldots, n.$$  

Moreover for elements $(P_1, \ldots, P_n) \in (E \setminus E[2])^n$ with distinct $x$-coordinates $\wp(p_1), \ldots, \wp(p_n)$, the two systems of equations (5.5.1) and (5.5.4) are equivalent.$^{23}$ This means that among elements of the subset $\text{Bl}_n \subset E^n$ consisting of all $n$-tuples $(P_1, \ldots, P_n) \in (E \setminus \{0\})^n$ satisfying the constraints (5.5.2) for blow-up points, those satisfying the non-degeneracy condition

$$\wp'(p_i) \neq 0 \quad \text{and} \quad \wp(p_i) \neq \wp(p_j) \quad \text{whenever } i \neq j \quad \forall 1 \leq i, j \leq n$$

$^{23}$For every $m \in \mathbb{Z}$, $E[m]$ denote the subgroup of $m$-torsion points on $E$. 
are indeed blow-up points of the scaling family \( u_\lambda(z) \) of a type II solution of the singular Liouville equation \( \Delta u + e^u = 8\pi \delta_0 \) on \( E \).

We recall some properties about period integrals and Green’s functions in lemmas 5.5.3–5.5.4 below, before returning to the first approach outlined in 5.5.1.

**Lemma 5.5.3.** For any \( y \in \mathbb{C} \) and any \( \omega \in \Lambda = H_1(E; \mathbb{Z}) \), the \( \omega \)-period of the meromorphic differential \( \frac{\varphi'(y)dz}{\varphi(z) - \varphi(y)} \) on \( E = \mathbb{C}/\Lambda \) is given by

\[
(5.5.6) \quad \int_{L_\omega} \frac{\varphi'(y)}{\varphi(z) - \varphi(y)} dz \equiv 2\omega \cdot \zeta(y) - 2\eta(\omega) \cdot y \pmod{2\pi \sqrt{-1}\mathbb{Z}).
\]

Here \( L_\omega : [0,1] \to \mathbb{C} \) is any piecewise smooth path on \( C \) such that \( L_\omega(1) - L_\omega(0) = \omega \) and \( \varphi(z) \neq \varphi(y) \) for all \( z \in L_\omega([0,1]) \).

**Proof.** This is a reformulation of [35, Lemma 2.4]. Note that meromorphic differential \( \frac{\varphi'(y)dz}{\varphi(z) - \varphi(y)} \) on \( E \) has poles at 0 and \( \pm y \) mod \( \Lambda \), with residues 0 and \( \pm 1 \) respectively, therefore the period integral \( I_\omega(y) := \int_{L_\omega} \frac{\varphi'(y)dz}{\varphi(z) - \varphi(y)} \) is well-defined modulo \( 2\pi \sqrt{-1}\mathbb{Z}. \) The addition formula for \( \varphi(z) \) [54, p. 451] gives

\[
\frac{\varphi'(y)dz}{\varphi(z) - \varphi(y)} = \frac{\varphi'(z)dz}{\varphi(z) - \varphi(y)} - 2\zeta(z + y; \Lambda)dz + 2\zeta(z; \Lambda)dz + 2\zeta(y; \Lambda)dz
\]

The lemma follows after an easy calculation, using the fact that \( \frac{d\varphi(z)}{dz} = \zeta(z) \) and the functional equation for \( \zeta(z; \Lambda) \); see [35, Lemma 2.4] for details. Alternatively, one computes

\[
\frac{d}{dy}I_\omega(y) = \int_{L_\omega} (2\varphi(z + y) - 2\varphi(y))dz = -2\varphi(y) + 2\eta(\omega)
\]

and determine the constant of integration up to \( 2\pi \sqrt{-1}\mathbb{Z} \) by evaluation at 2-torsion points of \( E \). \( \square \)

**Lemma 5.5.4.** Let \( G \) be the Green’s function on \( E = \mathbb{C}/\Lambda \) as in (0.1.1). The following formulas hold.

\[
(5.5.7) \quad G(z) = -\frac{1}{2\pi} \log \left| \Delta(\Lambda)^{1/2} \cdot e^{-z\eta(z;\Lambda)/2} \cdot \sigma(z;\Lambda) \right| \quad \text{on } E,
\]

\[
(5.5.8) \quad -4\pi \frac{\partial G}{\partial z}(z) = \zeta(z; \Lambda) - \eta(z; \Lambda) \quad \forall z \in \mathbb{C}.
\]

In the first formula (5.5.7), \( \eta(z; \Lambda) \) is the quasi-period and \( \Delta(\Lambda) \) is the non-zero cusp form of weight 12 for \( \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z}) \) given by the formula

\[
\Delta(\Lambda) = g_2(\Lambda)^3 - 27g_3(\Lambda)^2 = \left(\frac{2\pi \sqrt{-1}}{\omega_2}\right)^{12} \cdot q_\tau \cdot \prod_{m=1}^{\infty} (1 - q_\tau^m)^{24}
\]

with \( q_\tau = e^{2\pi \sqrt{-1} \tau} \) and \( \tau = \omega_2 / \omega_1 \) if \( \text{Im}(\omega_2 / \omega_1) > 0 \).
Remark 5.5.5. (a) An equivalent form of 5.5.4 (a) is

$$G(z; \Lambda_{\tau}) = -\frac{1}{2\pi} \log \left| e^{-\frac{\pi \log(z)^2}{\Im(\tau)}} \cdot \Delta(\mathbb{C}/\Lambda_{\tau})^{-\frac{1}{6}} \cdot \theta[\frac{1}{2}]^2(z; \tau) \right|$$

for the Green’s function $G(z; \Lambda_{\tau})$ on the elliptic curve $\mathbb{C}/\Lambda_{\tau}$, where $\tau$ is an element of the upper-half plane and $\Lambda_{\tau} = \mathbb{Z} \cdot \tau + \mathbb{Z}$). Here we have used the general notation for theta functions with characteristics

$$\theta[z](z; \tau) := \sum_{m \in \mathbb{Z}} e^{\pi \sqrt{-1} \tau (m+a)^2} \cdot e^{2\pi \sqrt{-1} (m+a)(z+b)}.$$ 

The equivalence of the two formulas follows from the formulas

$$\sigma(z, \Lambda_{\tau}) = -\frac{1}{\pi} e^{\eta(1, \Lambda_{\tau})} \cdot \frac{\theta[\frac{1}{2}]^2(z; \tau)}{\theta[z](z; \tau) \theta[\frac{1}{2}](z; \tau) \theta[\frac{1}{2}](z; \tau)}$$

and

$$\theta[z](z; \tau) \theta[\frac{1}{2}](z; \tau) \theta[\frac{1}{2}](z; \tau) = 2 \eta_{\text{Dedekind}}(\tau)^3 = 2 \left( \frac{1}{\pi} \prod_{m=1}^{\infty} (1 - q^m) \right)^3$$

(b) The function $Z(z; \Lambda) := \zeta(z; \Lambda) - \eta(z; \Lambda) = -4\pi \frac{\partial G}{\partial z}$ appeared in [23, p. 452]; we will call it the Hecke form. For any integers $a, b$ and $N \geq 1$ such that $\gcd(a, b, N) = 1$ and $(a, b) \neq (0, 0)$ mod $N$, $Z(\frac{a}{N} \tau + \frac{b}{N}; \mathbb{Z} \cdot \tau + \mathbb{Z})$ is a modular form of weight one and level $N$, equal to the Eisenstein series

$$-N \cdot E_N^1(\tau, s; a, b) \big|_{s=0} = -N \cdot \Im(\tau)^{s} \cdot \sum_{(m, n) \equiv (a, b) \text{ mod } N} N(m \tau + n)^{-1} \cdot |m \tau + n|^{-2s} \big|_{s=0}$$

See [23, p. 475].

Proof of Lemma 5.5.4. The formula (5.5.7) is proved in [31, II, §5]. The equivalent formula in 5.5.5(a) is proved in [18, p. 417–418]. See also [34, §7] and [35, §2]. The formula (5.5.8) follows from (a) by an easy computation. □

Theorem 5.6. Let $n$ be a positive integer. Let $P_i = \dot{p}_i \mod \tau, i = 1, \ldots, n$ be $n$ distinct points on $E = \mathbb{C}/\Lambda$ such that $\{P_1, \ldots, P_n\} \cap \{-P_1, \ldots, -P_n\} = \varnothing$. In other words $\varphi(P_1), \ldots, \varphi(P_n)$ are mutually distinct and none of the $P_i$'s is a 2-torsion point of $E$. There exists a normalized type II developing map $f$ for a solution $u$ of $\Delta u + e^u = 8\pi \delta_0$ on $E$ such that $f(P_1) = \cdots = f(P_n) = 0$ if and only if

$$\sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{\partial G}{\partial z}(p_i) = 0 \quad (5.6.1)$$

and

$$\varphi'(p_1)\varphi'(p_1) + \cdots + \varphi'(p_n)\varphi'(p_n) = 0 \quad \text{for } r = 0, \ldots, n - 2 \quad (5.6.2)$$

Notice that (5.6.1) is the same as (5.5.2) and (5.6.2) is the same as (5.5.1).
Proof. We use the notation in the proof of Theorem 5.2 and continue with
the argument there. The logarithmic derivative \( g = \frac{f'}{f} \) of a normalized
type II developing map has simple poles at the 2\( n \) points \( \pm P_1, \ldots, \pm P_n \) and
is holomorphic elsewhere on \( E \). Moreover the residue of \( g \) is 1 \( P_i \) and is \(-1 \)
at \(-P_i \) for each \( i \). Therefore

\[
g(z) = \frac{\wp'(p_1)}{\wp(z) - \wp(p_1)} + \cdots + \frac{\wp'(p_n)}{\wp(z) - \wp(p_n)}.
\]

because \( g(0) = 0 \). We know two more properties of \( g \): (a) \( g(z) \) has a zero
of order 2\( n \) at \( z = 0 \), and (b) for any \( \omega \in \Lambda \) and any piecewise smooth path
\( L_\omega : [0, 1] \to \mathbb{C} \) such that \( L(1) - L(0) = \omega \) and \( L([0, 1]) \cap (\bigcup_{i=1}^n p_i + \Lambda \cup \bigcup_{i=1}^n -p_i + \Lambda) = \emptyset \), we have

\[
\int_{L_\omega} g \, dz \in \sqrt{-1} \mathbb{R}.
\]

To see what property (a) means, we expand \( g(z) \) at \( z = 0 \) as a power series
in \( \wp(z) \):

\[
g(z) = \sum_{j=1}^n \frac{\wp'(p_j)}{\wp(z) (1 - \wp(p_j)/\wp(z))} = \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \left( \sum_{j=1}^n \wp'(p_j) \wp(p_j)^m \right) \cdot \wp(z)^{-m-1}
\]

Because \( g \) has exactly 2\( n \) simple poles and is holomorphic elsewhere on \( E \),
we see that \( \text{order}_{z=0} g(z) = 2n \) if and only if all \( n - 1 \) equations in (5.6.2)
hold.

We know that \( \eta(z; \Lambda) y - z \eta(y; \Lambda) \equiv 0 \pmod{\sqrt{-1} \mathbb{R}} \) for all \( y, z \in \mathbb{C} \)
because the left-hand side is \( \mathbb{R} \)-bilinear and we know from the Legendre
relation that the statement holds when \( y, z \) are both in \( \Lambda \). By Lemma 5.5.3,

\[
\int_{L_\omega} g(z) \, dz \equiv 2 \sum_{j=1}^n (\omega \zeta(p_j) - \eta(\omega) p_j) \pmod{2\pi \sqrt{-1} \mathbb{Z}}
\]

\[
\equiv 2\omega \cdot \sum_{j=1}^n (\zeta(p_j) - \eta(p_j)) \pmod{\sqrt{-1} \mathbb{R}}
\]

for all \( \omega \in \Lambda \). Therefore property (b) holds for \( g \) given by (5.6.3) if and only
the equation (5.6.1) holds. We have proved the “only if” part of Theorem
5.6.

Conversely suppose that equations (5.6.2) and (5.6.1) hold. We have seen
that the meromorphic function \( g(z) \) given by (5.6.3) has a zero of order 2\( n \) at
\( z = 0 \) and the period integrals of \( g \, dz \) are all purely imaginary. Therefore
\( f(z) = \exp \int_0^z g(w) \, dw \) is a type II developing map for a solution of the
singular Liouville equation \( \Delta u + e^u = 8\pi \delta_0 \). \( \Box \)
Remark 5.6.1. The property (a) that the order of the meromorphic function
\[ \frac{\wp'(p_1)}{\wp(z) - \wp(p_1)} + \cdots + \frac{\wp'(p_n)}{\wp(z) - \wp(p_n)} \]
on $E$ at $z = 0$ is equal to $2n$ is also equivalent to: \( \exists C \in \mathbb{C}^\times \) such that
\[ \sum_{j=1}^{n} \wp'(p_j) \prod_{i \neq j} (\wp(z) - \wp(p_i)) = C. \]

5.7. Analytic approach to the configuration of the blow-up set.

5.7.1. We may also study the set \( \{ p_1, \ldots, p_n \} \) from the analytic point of view. As we have already seen, \( \{ p_i \} \) also represents the blow-up set of the family of solutions \( u_\lambda \) as \( \lambda \to \infty \). The equations to determine the position of blow-up points are fundamentally important in the study of bubbling solutions of semi-linear equations such as mean field equations, Chern–Simons–Higgs equation, Toda system in two dimension, or scalar curvature equation in higher dimensions. Hence we will derive these equations from the analytic aspect.

We recall the definition of blow-up points for a sequence of solutions \( u_k \), \( k \in \mathbb{N} \), to the mean field equation
\[ \triangle u_k + e^{u_k} = \rho_k \delta_0 \quad \text{on } E \]
with possibly varying singular strength \( \rho_k \) such that \( \rho_k \to \rho = 8\pi n \) for some \( n \in \mathbb{N} \). If \( \rho_k = 8\pi n \) for all \( k \), this goes back to the situation \( u_\lambda \) in (0.2.4) as has been discussed. In general it is also important to consider blow-up phenomenon from a sequence of type I solutions \( u_k \) with \( \rho_k \to \rho \).

(5.7.1)
\[ \text{It is also shown in [8] that } m = n \text{ and the configuration of the blow-up points } \{ p_1, \ldots, p_n \} \text{ satisfies the following equations:} \]
\[ nG_z(p_i) = \sum_{j=1, j \neq i}^{n} G_z(p_i - p_j), \quad i = 1, 2, \ldots, n, \]
where \( z \) is the coordinate for \( C \) and \( G_z = \frac{\partial G}{\partial z} \). Notice that the system of equations (5.7.2) is the same as the equations (5.5.3). Summing the \( n \) equations in (5.7.2) from \( i = 1, \ldots, n \), we get

\[
\sum_{i=1}^{n} G_z(P_i) = 0, \tag{5.7.3}
\]

since \( \frac{\partial G}{\partial z} \) is an odd function. The last equation (5.7.3) is the same as the Green equation (5.5.2) and (5.6.1).

**Lemma 5.7.3.** Let \( \{P_1, \ldots, P_n\} \) be a set of \( n \) mutually distinct points in \( E \setminus \{0\} = C/\Lambda \setminus \{0\} \), and let \( p_1, \ldots, p_n \) be elements of \( C \) such that \( P_i = [p_i] := p_i \mod \Lambda \) for \( i = 1, \ldots, n \). The system of equations (5.7.2) for the set \( \{P_1, \ldots, P_n\} \) is equivalent to the combination of the Green equation (5.7.3) and the following system equations

\[
\sum_{1 \leq j \leq n, j \neq i} \left( \zeta(p_i - p_j; \Lambda) + \zeta(p_j; \Lambda) - \zeta(p_i; \Lambda) \right) = 0, \quad \forall i = 1, \ldots, n. \tag{5.7.4}
\]

Notice that for each \( i \), the sum in the left-hand side of (5.7.4) is independent of the choice of representatives \( p_1, \ldots, p_n \in C \) of \( P_1, \ldots, P_n \in C/\Lambda \).

**Proof.** We have seen that the \( n \) equations in (5.7.2) implies the Green equation (5.5.2). It suffices to show that under (5.7.3), the system of equations (5.7.2) is equivalent to the system of equations (5.7.4).

We know from 5.5.8 that \( G_z(P_i) = \zeta(p_i; \Lambda) - \eta(p_i; \Lambda) \) for each \( i \). So the Green equation (5.7.3) means that \( \sum_{i=1}^{n} \zeta(p_i; \Lambda) = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \eta(p_i; \Lambda) \). For each \( i \) the \( i \)-th equation in (5.7.2) becomes

\[
n \cdot \left[ \zeta(p_i; \Lambda) - \eta(p_i; \Lambda) \right] = \sum_{1 \leq j \leq n, j \neq i} \left( \zeta(p_i - p_j; \Lambda) - \eta(p_i; \Lambda) + \eta(p_j; \Lambda) \right)
\]

which is equivalent to the \( i \)-th equation in (5.7.4) because \( \sum_{i=1}^{n} \zeta(p_i; \Lambda) = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \eta(p_i; \Lambda) \). \( \square \)

**Remark 5.7.4.** Part of the condition for the blow-up set \( \{P_1, \ldots, P_n\} \) of a sequence of solutions \( (u_k) \) as in 5.7.2 is that

\[
P_i \neq P_j \quad \text{for} \quad i \neq j, \tag{5.7.5}
\]

instead of the stronger property

\[
\{P_1, \ldots, P_n\} \cap \{-P_1, \ldots, -P_n\} = \emptyset \tag{5.7.6}
\]

which is satisfied when \( \{p_1, \ldots, p_n\} \) are zeros of a normalized developing map of a solution of \( \triangle u + e^u = 8\pi n\delta \).

5.8. Equivalence of algebraic systems (5.6.2) and (5.7.4) under (5.7.6)
5.8.1. In light of Theorem 0.6, the analytic discussion in §5.7 suggests that the system of equations (5.5.2) + (5.6.2) may be equivalent to the system of equations (5.5.2) + (5.7.4) under the constraint that \( P_i \neq P_j \) whenever \( i \neq j \) and \( P_i \neq -P_j \) for all \( i, j \).

Since the Green equation (5.5.2) is the only non-holomorphic equation shared by both systems, one might optimistically ask

Are the two holomorphic systems of \( n - 1 \) equations (5.6.2) and (5.7.4) equivalent?

Note that the sum of equations in (5.7.4) is zero, hence we may remove one equation from it.

5.8.2. To answer this question, we recall the addition formula

\[
\frac{1}{2} \frac{\wp'(z) - \wp'(u)}{\wp(z) - \wp(u)} = \zeta(z + u) - \zeta(z) - \zeta(u).
\]

Thus (5.7.4) with additional constraint \( p_i \neq \pm p_j \) for \( i \neq j \) is equivalent to

\[
\sum_{j \neq i} \frac{\wp'(p_i) + \wp'(p_j)}{\wp(p_i) - \wp(p_j)} = 0, \quad i = 1, \ldots, n.
\]

Denote by \((x_i, y_i) = (\wp(p_i), \wp'(p_i))\). As points on \( E \) they are related by the defining cubic curve equation \( y_i^2 = p(x_i) = 4x_i^3 - g_2x_i - g_3 \). Then (5.8.1) and (5.6.2) can be written as the following systems respectively:

\[
\sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{y_i + y_j}{x_i - x_j} = 0, \quad \forall i = 1, \ldots, n,
\]

where \( x_i \neq x_j \) for \( i \neq j \) is imposed, and

\[
\sum_{i=1}^{n} x_i^l y_i = 0, \quad \forall l = 0, \ldots, n - 2.
\]

Both systems appear to be linear in \( y_i/\)'s, and in fact we can prove their equivalence even without the elliptic curve equations:

**Proposition 5.8.3.** For a given set of mutually distinct elements \( x_1, \ldots, x_n \in \mathbb{C} \), the linear systems of equations

\[
\sum_{1 \leq j \leq n, \; j \neq i} \frac{Y_i + Y_j}{x_i - x_j} = 0, \quad \forall i = 1, \ldots, n
\]

and

\[
\sum_{i=1}^{n} x_i^l \cdot Y_i = 0, \quad \forall l = 0, \ldots, n - 2
\]

in variables \( Y_1, \ldots, Y_n \) are equivalent.
Proof. The system (5.8.4) corresponds to the \( n \times n \) matrix

\[
A_n = \begin{pmatrix}
\sum_{k=2}^{n} \frac{1}{x_1-x_k} & \frac{1}{x_1-x_2} & \frac{1}{x_1-x_3} & \cdots & \frac{1}{x_1-x_n} \\
\frac{1}{x_2-x_1} & \sum_{k=1, k \neq 2}^{n} \frac{1}{x_2-x_k} & \frac{1}{x_2-x_3} & \cdots & \frac{1}{x_2-x_n} \\
\vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \ddots & \vdots \\
\frac{1}{x_n-x_1} & \frac{1}{x_n-x_2} & \cdots & \cdots & \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{x_n-x_k}
\end{pmatrix},
\]

that is, \( A_n = (a_{ij}) \in M_n(\mathbb{Q}(x_1, \cdots, x_n)) \), where \( a_{ij} = \frac{1}{x_i-x_j} \) if \( j \neq i \), and \( a_{ij} = \sum_{k=1, k \neq i}^{n} \frac{1}{x_j-x_k} \) if \( j = i \), which is the sum of all the other entries in the same row. Note that the sum of all rows in \( A_n \) is the zero row vector. In particular, \( \det A_n = 0 \).

The system (5.8.5) corresponds to the \( (n-1) \times n \) matrix

\[
B_n := \begin{pmatrix}
1 & \cdots & 1 \\
x_1 & \cdots & x_n \\
\vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\
x_1^{n-2} & \cdots & x_n^{n-2}
\end{pmatrix}.
\]

Let \( b = (b_1, \cdots, b_n) \) where \( b_i \) is the determinant of the \( (n-1) \times (n-1) \) minor of \( B_n \) without the \( i \)-th column. Then \( b_i \)'s are given by the Vandermonde determinant:

\[
b_i = \prod_{1 \leq l < k \leq n; l \neq i} (x_k - x_i).
\]

Let \( C_n \) be the \( (n-1) \times n \) matrix consisting of the first \( n-1 \) rows of \( A_n \), and define \( c = (c_1, \cdots, c_n) \) similarly.

We want to prove \( c \neq 0 \), which implies that rank \( A_n = n-1 \) and the kernel of \( A_n \) is spanned by \( c \). Then the equivalence of these two linear systems simply means that \( b \) and \( c \) are proportional to each other.

We claim that

\[
c_i = \frac{(-1)^{n+i}(n-1)!}{\prod_{k \neq i}(x_k - x_i)}, \quad i = 1, \ldots, n.
\]

Due to symmetry, it is enough to consider the case \( i = n \). We will show that the order of \( c_n \) along the divisor \( x_k - x_l \) is non-negative for all \( k, l \neq n \). This will imply that \( c_n \) is a constant times \( \prod_{k=1}^{n-1}(x_k - x_n)^{-1} \).

Again by symmetry, it is enough to check the case \( k = 1, l = 2 \). The only terms which may contribute poles along \( x_k - x_l \) are \( a_{11}, a_{12}, a_{21}, a_{22} \). If we subtract the second row by the first row, and then add the resulting first column into the second column, we get the following \( (n-1) \times (n-1) \)
matrix
\[
\begin{pmatrix}
\frac{1}{x_1 - x_2} + r & -r & * & \cdots & * \\
r & (x_1 - x_2) * & * & \cdots & * \\
* & (x_1 - x_2) * & * & \cdots & * \\
\vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\
* & (x_1 - x_2) * & * & \cdots & * 
\end{pmatrix}
\]
where \( r = \sum_{j=3}^{n} \frac{1}{x_1 - x_j} \), as well as all entries labeled by *, does not have pole along the divisor \( x_1 - x_2 \). This shows that \( \det(a_{ij})_{1 \leq i, j \leq n-1} \) has non-negative order along \( x_1 - x_2 \). So there exists an element \( d_n \in \mathbb{C} \) such that

\[(5.8.7) \quad c_n = \frac{d_n}{\prod_{k<n} (x_k - x_n)}.\]

By Lemma 5.8.4 below we have \( d_n = (n-1)! \neq 0 \). Then (5.8.6) holds and we have \( c \neq 0 \). Now we note that

\[b_i = \frac{(-1)^{n-i} \prod_{1 \leq l < k \leq n} (x_k - x_l)}{\prod_{k \neq i} (x_k - x_i)} = \frac{1}{(n-1)!} \prod_{1 \leq i < k \leq n} (x_k - x_i)c_i,\]

i.e. \( b \) is parallel to \( c \). Hence the equivalence is proved. \( \square \)

**Lemma 5.8.4.** The constant \( d_n \) in (5.8.7) is \( (n-1)! \).

We offer two proofs.

**The first/analytic proof.** It is easy to see that \( d_1 = 1 \). If we may show that \( d_n = (n-1)d_{n-1} \) for \( n \geq 2 \) then we are done. We observe that

\[
\frac{d_n}{\prod_{2 \leq k < n} (x_k - x_n)} = \lim_{x_1 \to \infty} \frac{d_n x_1}{\prod_{k<n} (x_k - x_n)}
\]

which, by the definition of \( c_n \) and (5.8.7), is equal to

\[
\lim_{x_1 \to \infty} \begin{vmatrix}
\sum_{k=2}^{n} \frac{x_1}{x_1 - x_k} & \frac{x_1}{x_1 - x_2} & \frac{x_1}{x_1 - x_3} & \cdots & \frac{x_1}{x_1 - x_{n-1}} \\
\frac{1}{x_2 - x_1} & \sum_{k=1, k \neq 2}^{n} \frac{1}{x_2 - x_k} & \frac{1}{x_2 - x_3} & \cdots & \frac{1}{x_2 - x_{n-1}} \\
\vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots & \vdots \\
\frac{1}{x_{n-1} - x_1} & \frac{1}{x_{n-1} - x_2} & \cdots & \cdots & \sum_{k=1, k \neq n-1}^{n} \frac{1}{x_{n-1} - x_k}
\end{vmatrix}.
\]

Since

\[
\lim_{x_1 \to \infty} \sum_{k=2}^{n} \frac{x_1}{x_1 - x_k} = n - 1,
\]
by evaluating the limit, the determinant becomes
\[
\frac{1}{n-1} \begin{vmatrix}
\sum_{k=3}^{n} \frac{1}{x_k-x_3} & \frac{1}{x_k-x_4} & \cdots & \frac{1}{x_k-x_{n-1}} \\
\frac{1}{x_3-x_2} & \sum_{k=2, k \neq 3}^{n} \frac{1}{x_k-x_3} & \cdots & \frac{1}{x_k-x_{n-1}} \\
\vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\
\frac{1}{x_{n-1}-x_2} & \frac{1}{x_{n-1}-x_3} & \cdots & \sum_{k=2, k \neq n-1}^{n} \frac{1}{x_k-x_{n-1}}
\end{vmatrix}
\]

\[
= (n-1) \frac{d_{n-1}}{\prod_{2 < k < n} (x_k-x_n)}.
\]

Thus \( d_n = (n-1)d_{n-1} \) as expected.

The second/analytic proof. It is enough to consider the specialization \( x_i = \zeta^i \) for \( i = 1, \ldots, n \), where \( \zeta = e^{2\pi i/n} \) is the \( n \)-th primitive root of unity. Let \( A' = (a'_{ij}) \) be the specialized matrix and \( A'' = (a''_{ij}) \) the Hermitian matrix with
\[
a''_{ij} := \zeta^i a'_{ij} = \begin{cases} 
\frac{1}{1-\zeta^{-i}} & \text{if } i \neq j, \\
\sum_{k=1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{1-\zeta^k} = \frac{n-1}{2} & \text{if } i = j.
\end{cases}
\]

Here the diagonal entries \( a''_{ii} = \frac{1}{2}(n-1) \) follows from the fact that
\[
\frac{1}{1-\zeta^k} + \frac{1}{1-\zeta^{n-k}} = 1 - \zeta^{n-k} + 1 - \zeta^k = 1.
\]

Let \( V \) be the underlying vector space of the group ring \( \mathbb{Q}[\mathbb{Z}/n\mathbb{Z}] = \oplus_{j \in \mathbb{Z}/n\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Q} \cdot [j] \). Then \( (A'')^t \) is the matrix representation of the following operator \( T \) on \( V \) with respect to the basis \([1], [2], \ldots, [n]\):
\[
T = \frac{n-1}{2} + \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{1-\zeta^j}[j].
\]

We put the Hermitian inner product on \( V \) so that \([i]'s are orthonormal. It is easy to diagonalize \( A'' \). Indeed, for \( a \in \mathbb{Z}/n\mathbb{Z} \), let
\[
x_a := \sum_{i \in \mathbb{Z}/n\mathbb{Z}} \zeta^{-ia} [i] \in \mathbb{Q}[\mathbb{Z}/n\mathbb{Z}].
\]

Then \( V \) is also the orthogonal direct sum of the one dimensional subspaces \( V_a := \mathbb{Q} \cdot x_a \). It is easily seen that \([j] \cdot x_a = \zeta^a x_a \). Hence \( x_a \)'s are eigenvectors of \( T \) with eigenvalues
\[
\lambda_a = \frac{n-1}{2} + \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \frac{\zeta^a}{1-\zeta^j}.
\]
In fact $\lambda_a = a - 1$ for $a = 1, \ldots, n$. To see this, we rewrite $\lambda_a$ as

$$
\lambda_a = (n - 1) - \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \frac{1 - \zeta^{aj}}{1 - \zeta^j} = (n - 1) - \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \sum_{k=0}^{a-1} \zeta^{jk}.
$$

By changing the order of summation, for $k = 0$ we get $n - 1$, while for $k = 1, \ldots, a - 1$ we get $\sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \zeta^{jk} = -1$. Hence $\lambda_a = a - 1$ as expected.

The diagonalization in terms of matrices reads as

$$
CA'' = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ n-1 & \cdots & \cdots & 0 \end{pmatrix} C,
$$

where the $a$-th row vector of $C = (z_{ij})_{1 \leq i,j \leq n}$, $z_{ij} := \zeta^{-ij}$ corresponds to $x_a$.

Now we work on $\Lambda^{n-1}V$ and $\Lambda^{n-1}T \in \text{End}(\Lambda^{n-1}V)$. For a square matrix $B$, $\Lambda^{n-1}B = \text{adj}(B)^t$ is the “non-transposed” cofactor matrix. It has the covariant property that $\Lambda^{n-1}B_1B_2 = (\Lambda^{n-1}B_1)(\Lambda^{n-1}B_2)$. We find

$$
\Lambda^{n-1}A'' = \Lambda^{n-1}C^{-1} \begin{pmatrix} (n-1)! & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \end{pmatrix} \Lambda^{n-1}C.
$$

Hence

$$
(\Lambda^{n-1}A'')_{ni} = (n - 1)!(\Lambda^{n-1}C^{-1})_{ni}(\Lambda^{n-1}C)_{1i}.
$$

To compute the right hand side, from $C^tC = nI_n$ and $C.\text{n}^{(n-1)}C^t = (\det C)I_n$, we get

$$
\Lambda^{n-1}C = n^{-1}(\det C)C.
$$

Also $C^{-1} = n^{-1}C^t$. The same reasoning implies that

$$
\Lambda^{n-1}C^{-1} = n^{-(n-1)}\Lambda^{n-1}C^t = n^{-n}(\det C)^t C^t = (\det C)^{-1}C^t.
$$

In particular, (5.8.8) becomes

$$
(\Lambda^{n-1}A'')_{ni} = \frac{(n - 1)!}{n} \xi_i.
$$

By definition of $c_{i\ell}$, the equation (5.8.7) for $d_n$ specialized to $x_i = \xi_i$ reads as (notice that $\prod_{i=1}^{n-1}(1 - \xi^i) = n$)

$$
(-1)^{n+i}(\Lambda^{n-1}A')_{ni} = \frac{(-1)^{n+i}d_n}{\prod_{k \neq i}(\xi^k - \xi^i)} = \frac{(-1)^{n+i}d_n\xi^i(-1)^{n-1}}{n}.
$$

Since $(-1)^{n+i}(\Lambda^{n-1}A')_{ni} = (-1)^{n+i}(-1)^{n-1}(\Lambda^{n-1}A'')_{ni}$, the above two expressions lead to $d_n = (n - 1)!$. \hfill \square

**Remark.** We found the algebraic proof first which gives the value $d_n = (n - 1)!$. The shorter and more elementary analytic proof came much later which was inspired by the factorial nature of $d_n$. Then we were informed by Y. Zarhin that Lemma 5.8.4 appeared in [47, §1], with a different proof.
Corollary 5.8.5. For \( P_1, \cdots, P_n \in E \) satisfying \( P_i \neq P_j \) for \( i \neq j \) and \( P_i \neq -P_j \) for all \( i, j \), the system of equations (5.6.2) is equivalent to (5.8.1), hence also equivalent to (5.7.4).

Remark 5.8.6. We record two easy observations about the system of linear equations (5.8.9)

\[
\sum_{i=1}^{n} s_i^l \cdot Y_i = 0, \quad \forall l = 0, \ldots, n - 2
\]

with \( s_1, \ldots, s_n \) in \( \mathbb{C} \).

(a) If \( s_1, \ldots, s_n \) are mutually distinct, and \((y_1, \ldots, y_n)\) is a solution of (5.8.9) in which one \( y_i \) is 0, then all \( y_j \)'s are equal to zero.

(b) If \( s_1, \ldots, s_n \) are not mutually distinct, then (5.8.9) only has trivial solutions in the following sense: We have a set \( \{t_1, \ldots, t_m\} \) consisting of mutually distinct numbers such that \( \{s_1, \ldots, s_n\} = \{t_1, \ldots, t_m\} \). Suppose that \((y_1, \ldots, y_n)\) is a solution of (5.8.9), let \( z_j := \sum_{\text{all } i \text{ s.t. } s_i = t_j} y_i \) for \( i = 1, \ldots, m \). Then the system of linear equations for \( y_1, \ldots, y_n \) becomes

\[
\sum_{j=1}^{m} s_j^l \cdot z_j = 0 \quad \text{for } l = 0, \ldots, n - 2,
\]

and \( z_1 = \ldots = z_m = 0 \) by the non-vanishing of the Vandermonde determinant.

6. Lamé for type II: Characterizations of \( X_n \) and \( Y_n \)

6.1. An overview for this section.

6.1.1. In §5, we have proved that for each positive integer \( n \), for every solution \( u \) of the mean field equation

\[
\triangle u + e^u = 8\pi n \cdot \delta_0 \quad \text{on } \mathbb{C}/\Lambda
\]

there exists a set \( a = \{a_1, \cdots, a_n\} \) of \( n \) complex numbers which satisfies (5.5.2), (5.6.2) and (5.7.6) such that

\[
f(z) = f_a(z) := \prod_{i=1}^{n} \exp \left( \int_{0}^{z} \frac{\varphi'(a_i)}{\varphi(w) - \varphi(a_i)} \, dw \right),
\]

is a normalized type II developing map of \( u \). Moreover every set \( a = \{a_1, \cdots, a_n\} \) of complex numbers satisfying conditions (5.5.2), (5.6.2) and (5.7.6) gives rise to a solution of the above mean field equation.

6.1.2. In this section we will leave the Green equation (5.5.2) alone and consider those \( a = \{a_1, \cdots, a_n\} \) satisfy only the equations (5.6.2) under the constraint (5.7.6), that is, we consider \( a \) in the set \( X_n \) defined in (0.6.6) in the introduction. We would like to characterize \( a \in X_n \) in terms of certain Lamé equations.
6.1.3. We will make use of the following addition formulas freely:

\[
\frac{\wp'(z)}{\wp(z) - \wp(u)} = \zeta(z - u) + \zeta(z + u) - 2\zeta(z),
\]

(6.1.4) \[
\frac{\wp'(u)}{\wp(z) - \wp(u)} = \zeta(z - u) - \zeta(z + u) + 2\zeta(u),
\]

(6.1.5) \[
\frac{1}{2} \frac{\wp'(z) - \wp'(u)}{\wp(z) - \wp(u)} = \zeta(z + u) - \zeta(z) - \zeta(u),
\]

(6.1.6) \[
\frac{1}{4} \left( \frac{\wp'(z) - \wp'(u)}{\wp(z) - \wp(u)} \right)^2 = \wp(z + u) + \wp(z) + \wp(u).
\]

**Definition 6.1.4.** Let \( \Lambda \) be a cocompact lattice in \( \mathbb{C} \). Let \( n \geq 1 \) be a positive integer. Let \([a] = \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\}\) be an unordered list of \( n \) elements in \((\mathbb{C}/\Lambda) \setminus \{0\}\), possibly with multiplicity. Define a meromorphic function \( f_{[a]}(z) \) on \( \mathbb{C} \) by

\[
f_{[a]}(z) = f_{[a]}(z; \Lambda) := \prod_{i=1}^{n} \exp \int_{0}^{z} \left( \frac{\wp(w - a_i) - \wp(w + a_i) + 2\zeta(a_i)}{\wp(z)} \right) dw.
\]

where \( a_i \) is a representative in \( \mathbb{C} \) of \([a_i]\) for each \( i = 1, \ldots, n \).

Note that \( f_{[a]} \) depends only on the element \( \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\}\) of the symmetric product \( \text{Sym}^n((\mathbb{C}/\Lambda) \setminus \{0\}) \) and not on the choice of representatives \( a_i \in [a_i] \). Because \( \zeta(z; \Lambda) = \frac{d}{dz} \log(z; \Lambda) \), we get from (6.1.4) an equivalent definition

\[
f_{[a]}(z) := (-1)^n \cdot e^{2\pi \Sigma_{i=1}^{n} \zeta(a_i)} \cdot \prod_{i=1}^{n} \frac{\sigma(z - a_i)}{\sigma(z + a_i)}.
\]

Note also that \( f_{[a]}(0) = 1 \) and \( f_{[a]}(-z) \cdot f_{[a]}(z) = 1 \) for all \( z \).

**Definition 6.1.5.** Let \( a = \{a_1, \ldots, a_n\} \) be an unordered list of elements of \( \mathbb{C} \setminus \Lambda \). The Hermite-Halphen ansatz function \( w_a(z) \) attached to the list \( a \) is the meromorphic function on \( \mathbb{C} \) defined by

\[
w_a(z) = w_a(z; \Lambda) := e^{\Sigma \zeta(a_i)} \prod_{i=1}^{n} \frac{\sigma(z - a_i)}{\sigma(z)}.
\]

**Remark.** (a) In classical literature the functions \( w_a(z) \) arise as explicit solutions of the Lamé equation

\[
w'' = (n(n + 1)\wp(z) + B)w;
\]

see [24, I-VIII], [22, p. 495–497] and also [54, §23.7].

(b) Clearly we have

\[
f_{[a]}(z) = \frac{w_a(z)}{w_{-a}(z)},
\]

where \(-a\) is the list \( \{-a_1, \ldots, -a_n\} \) and \([a]\) is the list \( \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\}\).
(c) If \( b = \{b_1, \ldots, b_n\} \) is a list such that \( b_i - a_i \in \Lambda \) for all \( i = 1, \ldots, n \), then \( \frac{w_b}{w_a} \in \mathbb{C}^\times \), a non-zero constant.

**Lemma 6.1.6.** If a list \( [a] = \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\} \) of \( n \) elements of \((\mathbb{C} / \Lambda) \setminus \{[0]\}\) satisfies (5.6.1), (5.6.2) and the non-degeneracy condition (5.7.6), then there exists a constant \( B = B_{[a]} \) such that the Schwarzian derivative of \( f_{[a]} \) satisfies

\[
S(f_{[a]}) = -2(n(n + 1)\wp(z; \Lambda) + B_{[a]}).
\]

**Proof.** By 5.6 \( f_{[a]} \) is a normalized developing map for the mean field equation (6.1.1), and the assertion follows from (3.1.4). \( \square \)

6.1.7. The constant \( B_{[a]} \) in 6.1.6 can be evaluated by a straightforward computation; the answer is

\[
(6.1.11) \quad B_{[a]} = (2n - 1) \sum_{i=1}^{n} \wp(a_i; \Lambda).
\]

On the other hand there is a proof of the formula (6.1.11) for \( B_{[a]} \) without resorting to messy computations, via Lamé’s differential equation (6.1.10) because \( f_{[a]} \) can be written as the ratio of two linearly independent solutions of (6.1.10). The idea is this: use the Hermite–Halphen ansatz functions \( w_a(z) \) to find solutions to Lamé equations, and compute the constant \( B \) can be computed from the ansatz solutions \( w_a \). Then \( f_{[a]} = w_a / w_{-a} \) has the expected Schwarzian derivative by ODE theory.

We take this approach since it requires less computation to prove the formula (6.1.11) for \( B_{[a]} \) and it leads to a characterization of the set \( Y_n \) defined in (0.5.2) as the set of all unordered lists \( a = \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\} \) of \( n \) elements in \((\mathbb{C} / \Lambda) \setminus \{[0]\}\) such that \( w_a(z; \Lambda) \) satisfies a Lamé equation (6.1.10) for some \( B \in \mathbb{C} \). see theorem 6.2. We then move back to characterize the set \( X_n \) defined in (0.6.6) as the set of all \( a \)'s such that \( \operatorname{ord}_{z=0} f_{[a]}(z) = 2n \), which is the highest possible value of \( \operatorname{ord}_{z=0} f_{[a]}(z) \); see Theorem 6.5. This leads to the important consequence that for \( a \in Y_n, a \notin X_n \) if and only if \( a = -a \), and a characterization of \( X_n \) via the Schwarzian derivative.

The following result is known in the literature, see e.g. [22]. We reproduce it here for the sake of completeness.

**Theorem 6.2 (Characterization of \( Y_n \)).** Let \( n \geq 1 \) be a positive integer. Let \( a = \{a_1, \ldots, a_n\} \) be an unordered list of \( n \) elements in \( \mathbb{C} \setminus \Lambda \). Let \( w_a \) be defined as in (6.1.9). Let \( [a] \) be the unordered list \( \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\} \), where \( [a_i] := a_i \text{ mod } \Lambda \in \mathbb{C} / \Lambda \) for each \( i \).

1. There exists a constant \( B \in \mathbb{C} \) such that the meromorphic function \( w_a \) on \( \mathbb{C} \) satisfies the Lamé equation (6.1.10) if and only if the following conditions hold:

   - \( [a_i] \neq [a_j] \) whenever \( i \neq j \), and
   - the \( a_i \)'s satisfy

\[
(6.2.1) \quad \sum_{j \neq i} (\zeta(a_i - a_j; \Lambda) - \zeta(a_j; \Lambda) + \zeta(a_i; \Lambda)) = 0, \quad i = 1, \ldots, n.
\]
In other words the necessary and sufficient condition is that \( a \) is a point of the variety \( Y_\eta \) in the notation of (0.6.6).

(2) If the system of equations (6.2.1) holds for \( a \), then \( w_a \) satisfies the Lamé equation (6.1.10) whose accessory parameter \( B \) of the equation is

\[
B = B_{[a]} = (2n - 1) \sum_{i=1}^{n} \varphi(a_i; \Lambda).
\]

Proof. If there are two indices \( i_1 \neq i_2 \) such that \( [a_{i_1}] = [a_{i_2}] \), then \( w_a(a_{i_1}) = w_a'(a_{i_1}) = 0 \). If \( w_a(z) \) is a solution of the second order linear ODE (6.1.10), then all higher derivatives of \( w_a(z) \) vanish at \( z = a_i \), so \( w_a(z) \) is identically zero, a contradiction. We have shown that the \( [a_i]'s \) must be mutually distinct if \( w_a(z) \) is a solution of (6.1.10).

The logarithmic derivative

\[
\frac{w_a'(z; \Lambda)}{w_a(z; \Lambda)} = \sum_i \left( \xi(a_i; \Lambda) + \xi(z - a_i; \Lambda) - \xi(z; \Lambda) \right)
\]

of \( w_a \) is an elliptic function on \( C/\Lambda \). Applying \( \frac{d}{dz} \) again, we get

\[
\frac{w''_a}{w_a} = \left( \frac{w'_a}{w_a} \right)' + \left( \frac{w'_a}{w_a} \right)^2
\]

\[
= \sum_i \left( \varphi(z) - \varphi(z - a_i) \right) + \sum_i \left( \xi(a_i) + \xi(z - a_i) - \xi(z) \right)^2
\]

\[
+ \sum_{i \neq j} \left( \xi(a_i) + \xi(z - a_i) - \xi(z) \right) \left( \xi(a_j) + \xi(z - a_j) - \xi(z) \right)
\]

(6.2.2)

where we have used the consequence

\[
\left( \xi(a_i) + \xi(z - a_i) - \xi(z) \right)^2 = \varphi(z) + \varphi(a_i) + \varphi(z - a_i).
\]

of (6.1.5) and (6.1.6) to add up the first two sums after the second equality sign in (6.2.2) to get the last expression of \( \frac{w''_a}{w_a} \) in (6.2.2).

The sum in the last line of (6.2.2) is an elliptic function on \( C/\Lambda \) with a double pole at \( z = 0 \) with Laurent expansion \( \frac{m}{z^2} + O(1) \); denote this function by \( F_a(z) \). Therefore \( w_a \) satisfies a Lamé equation (6.1.10) for some \( B \in C \) if and only if \( F_a(z) \) has no pole outside of \( [0] \in C/\Lambda \).

Suppose \( [a_{i_0}] \) appears in the list \( [a] = \{ [a_1], \ldots, [a_n] \} \) \( r \) times with \( r \geq 2 \) for some \( i_0 \in \{ 1, \ldots, n \} \). Then \( F_a(z) \) has a double pole at \( z = a_{i_0} \), where it has a Laurent expansion

\[
F_a(z) = r(r - 1)(z - a_{i_0})^{-2} + O((z - a_{i_0})^{-1})
\]

We have shown that if \( F_a(z) \) is holomorphic outside \( \Lambda \), then \( [a_i] \neq [a_j] \) whenever \( i \neq j \).
In particular, the function $F_a(z)$ is holomorphic on $(\mathbb{C}/\Lambda) \setminus \{[z_1], \ldots, [a_n]\}$ and has at most simple poles at $[z_1], \ldots, [z_n]$. Therefore $F_a(z)$ is holomorphic outside $\Lambda$ if and only if its residue at $z = a_i$ is zero for $i = 1, \ldots, n$, which means that

$$\sum_{j \neq i} (\zeta(a_j; \Lambda) + \zeta(a_i - a_j; \Lambda) - \zeta(a_i; \Lambda)) = 0, \quad \forall 1 \leq i \leq n.$$ 

This proves the statement (1) of Theorem 6.2.

We know that there are constants $B_1 \in \mathbb{C}$ such that

$$(6.2.3) \quad F_a(z) = n(n-1)\varphi(z; \Lambda) + B_1,$$

because $F_a(z)$ is holomorphic on $\mathbb{C} \setminus \{[0]\}$ and its Laurent expansion at $z = 0$ is $n(n-1) \cdot z^{-2} + O(1)$. To determine $B_1$, we need to compute its Laurent expansion at $z = 0$ modulo $O(z)$. From

$$\zeta(z - a_i; \Lambda) = -\zeta(a_i; \Lambda) - \varphi(a_i; \Lambda)z + O(z^2),$$

we get

$$F_a(z) = \sum_{i \neq j} \left( -\frac{1}{z} - \varphi(a_i; \Lambda)z + O(z^2) \right) \left( -\frac{1}{z} - \varphi(a_j; \Lambda)z + O(z^2) \right) = n(n-1) \frac{1}{z^2} + 2(n-1) \sum_{i} \varphi(a_i; \Lambda) + O(z).$$

In particular $B_1 = 2(n-1)$. From (6.2.2) we get

$$\frac{w''}{w_a} = n(n+1)\varphi(z; \Lambda) + (2n-1) \sum_{i=1}^{n} \varphi(a_i; \Lambda).$$

We have proved the statement (2). \qed

**Remark 6.2.1.** (a) Clearly that the necessary and sufficient condition in Theorem 6.2(1), which defines the variety $Y_n$, depends only on the list $[a] = \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\}$ of elements of in $(\mathbb{C}/\Lambda) \setminus \{[0]\}$ determined by $a$.

(b) It is also clear that a list $a = \{a_1, \ldots, a_n\}$ satisfies the condition in 6.2(1) if and only if the list $-a = \{-a_1, \ldots, -a_n\}$ does.

**Proposition 6.3.** Let $a = \{a_1, \ldots, a_n\}$ be an unordered list of elements in $\mathbb{C} \setminus \Lambda$, $n \geq 1$.

1. The function $w_a(z)$ is a common eigenvector for the translation action by elements of $\Lambda$:

$$\frac{w_a(z + \omega)}{w_a(z)} = e^{\omega \cdot \sum_{i=1}^{n} \zeta(a_i; \Lambda)} e^{-\eta(\omega; \Lambda) \cdot \sum_{i=1}^{n} a_i} \quad \forall \omega \in \Lambda.$$

This “eigenvalue package” attached to $w_a$ is the homomorphism

$$\chi_a : \Lambda \to \mathbb{C}^\times, \quad \omega \mapsto e^{\omega \cdot \sum_{i=1}^{n} \zeta(a_i; \Lambda)} e^{-\eta(\omega; \Lambda) \cdot \sum_{i=1}^{n} a_i} \quad \forall \omega \in \Lambda,$$

which depends only on the list $[a] = \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\}$.

2. If $w_a$ satisfies a Lamé equation (6.1.10), then so does $w_{-a}$.
(3) For any unordered list \( b = \{b_1, \ldots, b_n\} \) of elements in \( \mathbb{C} \setminus \Lambda \), the functions \( w_a \) and \( w_b \) are linearly dependent if and only if either \([b] = [a]\) or \([b] = [-a]\), where \([-a]\) is the unordered list \( \{-a_1, \ldots, -a_n\} \) of elements in \( \mathbb{C}/\Lambda \).

(4) The homomorphisms \( \chi_a \) and \( \chi_{-a} \) are equal if and only if there exists an element \( \omega \in \Lambda \) such that

\[
\sum_{i=1}^{n} \zeta(a_i; \Lambda) = \frac{\eta(\omega; \Lambda)}{2} \quad \text{and} \quad \sum_{i=1}^{n} a_i = \frac{\omega}{2},
\]

in which case \( \text{Im}(\chi_a) \subseteq \{\pm 1\} \).

(5) Suppose that \( w_a \) and \( w_{-a} \) are two solutions of a Lamé equation \((6.1.10)\), and \([a] \neq [-a]\). Then \( \chi_a \neq \chi_{-a} \). Moreover \( \mathbb{C} \cdot w_a \) and \( \mathbb{C} \cdot w_{-a} \) are characterized by the monodromy representation of \((6.1.10)\) as the two one-dimensional subspaces of solutions which are stable under the monodromy.

**Proof.** The statements (1) is immediate from the transformation formula for the Weierstrass \( \sigma \) function. The statements (2) and (3) are obvious and easy respectively. The statement (4) is a consequence of the Legendre relation for the quasi-periods.

Suppose that \([a] \neq [-a]\) and \( \chi_a = \chi_{-a} \). By (3) the monodromy representation of the Lamé equation \((6.1.10)\) is isomorphic to the direct sum \( \chi_a \oplus \chi_{\bar{a}} \), and the character \( \chi_a \) has order at most 2 by (4). Consider the algebraic form

\[
P(x) \frac{d^2y}{dx^2} + \frac{1}{2} P'(x) \frac{dy}{dx} - (n(n+1)x + B)y = 0
\]

of the Lamé equation \((6.1.10)\). The monodromy group \( M \) of \((6.3.2)\) contains the monodromy group \((6.1.10)\) as a normal subgroup of index at most 2, therefore \( M \) is a finite abelian group of order dividing 4. In particular the monodromy representation of the algebraic Lamé equation \((6.3.2)\) is completely reducible. However one knows from [52, Thm. 4.4.1] or [3, Thm. 3.1] that the monodromy representation of \((6.3.2)\) is not completely reducible, a contradiction. We have proved the first part of (5). The second part of (5) follows from the first part of (5).

**Proposition 6.4.** Suppose that \([a] = \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\}\) and \([b] = \{[b_1], \ldots, [b_n]\}\) are two points of \(Y_n\), \(n \geq 1\). If \( \sum_{i=1}^{n} \varphi(a_i; \Lambda) = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \varphi(b_i; \Lambda) \), the either \([a] = [b]\) or \([a] = [-b]\).

**Proof.** Pick representatives \(a_i \in [a_i]\) and \(b_j \in [b_j]\) for each \( i = 1, \ldots, n \). Suppose that \([b] \neq [a]\) and \([b] \neq [-a]\). The functions \( w_a(z) \) and \( w_b(z) \) are linearly independent by Proposition 6.3 (3) because \([b] \neq [a]\), and they satisfy the same Lamé differential equation because \( B_{[a]} = B_{[b]} \). By either [52, Thm. 4.4.1] or [3, Thm. 3.1], that image of the monodromy representation of the Lamé equation \( \frac{d^2w}{dz^2} - (n(n+1)w(z; \Lambda) + B_{[a]}w) = 0 \) is not contained in \( \mathbb{C} \times \mathbb{I}_2 \), for otherwise the monodromy group of the algebraic form of the above Lamé equation on \( \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \) is contained in the product of \( \mathbb{C} \times \mathbb{I}_2 \) with a subgroup of order two in \( \text{GL}_2(\mathbb{C}) \). So \( \mathbb{C} \cdot w_a \) and \( \mathbb{C} \cdot w_b \) are the two distinct
Theorem 6.5 (Characterization of $X_n$ by $\text{ord}_{z=0} f^\prime_{[a]}(z)$). Let $n \geq 1$ be a positive integer. Let $a = \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\}$ be an unordered list of $n$ non-zero points on the elliptic curve $C / \Lambda$. Let $a_1, \ldots, a_n$ be representatives of $[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]$ in $C \setminus \Lambda$.

(0) $f_{[a]}$ is a constant if and only if $[a] = [-a]$, where $[-a]$ is the unordered list $\{[-a_1], \ldots, [-a_n]\}$ of $n$ non-zero elements in the elliptic curve $C / \Lambda$.

(1) If $[a] \neq [-a]$, then $\text{ord}_{z=0} f^\prime_{[a]}(z) \leq 2n$.

(2) Assume that $[a] \neq [-a]$. Then $\text{ord}_{z=0} f^\prime_{[a]}(z) = n$ if and only if the Weierstrass coordinates $(\wp(a_i; \Lambda), \wp^\prime(a_i; \Lambda))$ of $[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]$ in $C / \Lambda$ satisfy the following system of polynomial equations.

\[
\sum_{i=1}^{n} \wp^\prime(a_i; \Lambda) \cdot \wp^k(a_i; \Lambda) = 0, \quad \text{for } k = 0, \ldots, n - 2.
\]

Moreover if the above equivalent conditions hold, then

- $\wp^\prime(a_i; \Lambda) \neq 0$ for all $i = 1, \ldots, n$ and
- $\wp(a_i; \Lambda) \neq \wp(a_j; \Lambda)$ whenever $i \neq j$.

In other words $[a]$ is a point of the variety $X_n$ defined in (0.6.6).

Proof. The divisor $\text{div}(f_{[a]})$ of the meromorphic function $f_{[a]}$ on $C$ is stable under translation by $\Lambda$, and $\text{div}(f_{[a]}) \mod \Lambda$ is the formal sum (or 0-cycle)

\[
\sum_{i=1}^{n} [a_i] - \sum_{i=1}^{n} [-a_i]
\]

of points of $C / \Lambda$. So if $f_{[a]}$ is a constant, the above formal sum is 0, meaning that $[a] = [-a]$. Conversely if $[a] = [-a]$, then

\[
\sum_{i=1}^{n} \zeta(a_i; \Lambda) = - \sum_{i=1}^{n} \zeta(a_i; \Lambda) = 0
\]

and $f_{[a]}$ is equal to the constant function 1. We have proved the statement (0).

Let $(x_i, y_i) := (\wp(a_i; \Lambda), \wp^\prime(a_i; \Lambda))$. We have

\[
\sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{y_i}{\wp(z; \Lambda) - x_i} = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{y_i \wp(z; \Lambda)^{-1}}{1 - x_i \wp(z; \Lambda)^{-1}} = \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \left( \sum_{i=1}^{n} y_i x_i^k \wp(z; \Lambda)^{-k-1} \right). 
\]
We conclude that

- \( \text{ord}_{z=0} f_{[a]}(z) > 2n \) if and only if \( \sum_{i=1}^{n} y_i x_i^k = 0 \) for \( k = 0, \ldots, n-1 \),
- \( \text{ord}_{z=0} f_{[a]}(z) = 2n \) if and only if \( \sum_{i=1}^{n} y_i x_i^k = 0 \) for \( 0 \leq k \leq n-2 \) while \( \sum_{i=1}^{n} y_i x_i^{n-1} \neq 0 \).

Suppose that \( \text{ord}_{z=0} f'_{[a]}(z) > 2n \), i.e. \( \sum_{i=1}^{n} y_i x_i^k = 0 \) for \( k = 0, \ldots, n-1 \). If \( x_1, \ldots, x_n \) are distinct, we get from the non-vanishing of the Vandermonde determinant that \( y_1 = \ldots = y_n = 0 \), meaning that \( [a_1], \ldots, [a_n] \) are all 2-torsion points. That contradicts the assumption that \( [a] \neq [-a] \). So we know that \( x_1, \ldots, x_n \) are not all distinct. Apply the argument in remark 5.8.6 (b): let \( \{s_1, \ldots, s_m\} = \{x_1, \ldots, x_n\} \) as sets without multiplicity, let

\[
z_j := \sum_{\text{all } i \text{ s.t. } s_i = t_j} y_i \quad \text{for } i = 1, \ldots, m,
\]

and we have \( z_1 = \ldots = z_m = 0 \). Note that for each \( j \), the \( y_i \)'s which appear in the sum defining \( z_j \) differ from each other at most by a sign \( \pm 1 \), so that the sum \( z_j \) is either 0 or a non-zero multiple of a \( y_i \). Note that we have cancelled a number of pairs \( ([a_i], [-a_i]) \) in forming the reduced system of equations

\[
\sum_{j=1}^{m} z_j s_j^k = 0 \quad \text{for } k = 0, \ldots, n-1.
\]

That \( z_1 = \ldots = z_m = 0 \) means that, after removing a number of pairs \( ([a_i], [-a_i]) \) from the unordered list \([a] \), we are left with another unordered list \([b] \) with \([b] = [-b] \). So again we have \([a] = [-a] \), a contradiction with proves the statement (1). The first part of statement (2) follows.

It remains to prove the second part of (2). We are assuming that \([a] \neq [-a] \) and \( \sum_{i=1}^{n} y_i x_i^k = 0 \) for \( k = 0, \ldots, n-2 \). If there exists \( i_1, i_2 \) between 1 and \( n \) such that \( x_{i_1} = x_{i_2} \), the same argument in the previous paragraph produces a contradiction that \([a] = [-a] \). Therefore \( x_1, \ldots, x_n \) are mutually distinct. If there is an \( i_0 \) such that \( y_{i_0} = 0 \), then \( y_1 = \ldots = y_n = 0 \) by Remark 5.8.6 (a), contradicting the assumption that \([a] \neq [-a] \).

We have seen in Proposition 5.8.5 that \( X_n \subset Y_n \), where \( X_n \) is defined in (0.6.6) and \( Y_n \) is defined in (0.5.2). The following proposition, which is a consequence of Theorem 6.5, describes the complement \( Y_n \setminus X_n \) of \( X_n \) in \( Y_n \).

**Proposition 6.6.** Let \( [a] = \{ [a_1], \ldots, [a_n] \} \) be a point of \( Y_n \), i.e. \( [a_i] \neq [0] \) for each \( i \), \( [a_i] \neq [a_j] \) whenever \( i \neq j \) and the equations (6.2.1) hold. Then \([a] \in X_n \) if and only if \([a] \neq [-a] \).

**Proof.** The “only if” part is part of the definition of \( X_n \). Assume that \([a] \neq [-a] \). We must show that \( a \in X_n \). We know from theorems 6.2 and 6.5 (0) that \( w_a \) and \( w_{-a} \) are linearly independent solutions of the Lamé equation (6.1.10). If \( a \notin X_n \), then the lists \([a] \) and \([-a] \) have common members.
So either (A) there exists two indices \( i_1, i_2 \) such that \( i_1 \neq i_2 \) and \( [a_{i_1}] = [-a_{i_2}] \), or (B) there exists an index \( i_3 \) such that \( [a_{i_3}] = [-a_{i_3}] \). We begin non-canonical process to reduce the length of the list \([a]\) while keeping the associated functions \( w_a \) and \( w_{-a} \) unchanged up to some non-zero constants: First remove all \( a_i \)'s such that \( [a_i] = [-a_i] \) from the list \( a \). In the resulting reduced list, remove both \( a_{i_1} \) and \( a_{i_2} \) from the list if \( i_1 \neq i_2 \) and \( [a_{i_1}] = [-a_{i_2}] \). Keep doing so until we get a sublist \( b = \{b_1, \ldots, b_m\} \) of \( a \) such that \( [b] \) and \( [-b] \) have no common members, \( m < n \), and there exists a non-zero constant \( C \in \mathbb{C}^\times \) such that

\[
f[b] = \frac{w_b}{w_{-b}} = C \cdot \frac{w_a}{w_{-a}} = C \cdot f[a].
\]

The Schwarzian derivative \( S(f[a]) \) satisfies

\[
S(f[a]) = -2(n(n+1)\varphi(z) + B[a]).
\]

Let

\[
2\eta := \text{ord}_{z=0} f'[a](z).
\]

Theorem 6.5 (1) tells us that

\[
2\eta = \text{ord}_{z=0} f'[a](z) \leq 2m < 2n.
\]

But then

\[
S(f[a]) = \frac{f'''[a]}{f'[a]} = 3 \left( \frac{f''[a]}{f'[a]} \right)^2 = -2\eta(\eta + 1) \frac{1}{z^2} + O(1),
\]

which contradicts to the previous expression of \( S(f[a]) \). Therefore \( [a] \in X_n \). \( \square \)

The characterization of \( X_n \) in terms of the Schwarzian derivative follows similarly:

**Corollary 6.7** (Characterization of \( X_n \) by \( S(f) \)). Let \( n \geq 1 \) be a positive integer. Let \( a_1, \ldots, a_n \) be complex numbers in \( \mathbb{C} \) \( \setminus \Lambda \), let \([a]\) be the unordered list \( \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\} \) and let \([-a]\) be the unordered list \( \{[-a_1], \ldots, [-a_n]\} \). Then \( [a] \in X_n \) if and only if \([a] \neq [-a]\) and

\[
S(f[a]) = -2(n(n+1)\varphi(z; \Lambda) + (2n-1) \sum_{i=1}^{n} \varphi(a_i; \Lambda)).
\]

**Proof.** If \([a] \in X_n \) then \([a] \neq [-a]\) by definition, and \( a \in Y_n \) because \( X_n \subset Y_n \). It follows that \( f[a] = \frac{w_a}{w_{-a}} \) is a quotient of two linearly independent solutions of a Lamé equation (6.1.10) and the formula for \( S(f_a) \) follows from Theorem 6.2 and the standard ODE theory.

Conversely, if (6.7.1) holds then \( \text{ord}_{z=0} f_a(z) = 2n \). Hence \( a \in X_n \) by Theorem 6.5. \( \square \)
Remark 6.8. We would like to point out the striking similarity between the solution $w_a$ to the Lamé equation and the defining power series of complex elliptic genera in the Weierstrass form studied in [53]. In a certain context of topological field theory, complex elliptic genera serves as the genus one partition function. In contrast to it, the mean field equation studies local yet very precise analytic behavior of a genus one curve. It would be very interesting to uncover a good reason that will account for the similarity between these two theories.

7. Hyperelliptic geometry on $\bar{X}_n$

We have seen in Proposition 6.4 that the fibers of the map $\pi : Y_n \to C$ which sends a typical point of $Y_n$ represented by an unordered list $[a] = \{a_1, \ldots, a_n\}$ of $n$ elements in $C/\Lambda \setminus \{0\}$ to
$$\pi([a]) = B[a] = (2n - 1) \cdot \sum_{i=1}^{n} \wp(a_i; \Lambda)$$
are exactly the orbits of the involution $i : [a] \mapsto [-a]$ on $Y_n$. We have also seen the complement $Y_n \setminus X_n$ of $X_n \subset Y_n$ is the set of all points of $Y_n$ fixed by the involution $i$. In turn the fact that both $X_n$ and $Y_n$ are locally the locus of common zeros of $n - 1$ holomorphic functions on $n$-dimensional complex manifolds suggest that $X_n$ and $Y_n$ are both one-dimensional. The fact that there exists a two-to-one map from $X_n \to C$ suggest that $X_n$ is the unramified locus of a possibly singular hyperelliptic curve, $Y_n$ is a partial compactification of $X_n$, $i$ is the hyperelliptic involution on $Y_n$, and $\pi : Y \to C$ is the hyperelliptic projection. The entire section is devoted to the proof of Theorem 0.7, which asserts that the above guesses are indeed true, and provides more detailed information about this hyperelliptic curve. Due to its fundamental importance, we shall give two different treatments of this result, one based on the theory of ordinary differential equations and another one based on purely algebraic method.

The analytic method continues the train of ideas in §6, that points of $Y_n$ corresponds to the ansatz solutions of Lamé equations with fixed index $n$ but varying accessory parameters. With the analytic method it is easier to show that the closure $\bar{X}_n$ of $X_n$ in the $n$-th symmetric product $\text{Sym}^n E = E^n / S_n$ of $E = C / \Lambda$ is $Y_n \cup \{\infty\}$, where “$\infty$” stands for the point $\{0, \ldots, 0\}$ of $\text{Sym}^n E$. Moreover one gets a recursively defined polynomial $\ell_n(B)$ of degree $2n + 1$ in $B$, whose roots are the image of the ramification points of $\pi : Y_n \to C$, i.e. fixed points of the involution $i$ on $Y_n$. With the algebraic method one gets not only the same polynomial $\ell_n(B)$, but also an explicit regular function $C$ on $\bar{X}_n$ such that $C^2 = \ell_n(B)$. In particular, $\bar{X}_n$ has arithmetic genus $n$. The algebraic method also allows us to analyze the limiting equations at $\infty$ and prove that $\infty$ is a smooth point of $\bar{X}_n$.

We emphasize that a priori there is no definite reason that the compactification of $Y_n$ in $\text{Sym}^n E$ should agree with the projective hyperelliptic model of
Xₙ defined in 7.6.1.e. Such an identification is one of the main statements we will establish; see Proposition 7.7.

7.1. Review of linear second order ODE. The starting point of this section is the following simple well-known observation on a second order ODE

\( w'' = Iw \)

Recall that the Wronskian

\[
C := \begin{vmatrix} w_1 & w_2 \\ w'_1 & w'_2 \end{vmatrix} = w_1w'_2 - w_2w'_1 = w_1w_2 \cdot \frac{d}{dz} \log \left( \frac{w_1}{w_2} \right)
\]

of two linearly independent solutions \( w_1, w_2 \) is obviously a non-zero constant since \( C' = 0 \). If the product \( X = w_1w_2 \) is easier to get hold of, then we may express the solutions \( w_1, w_2 \) in terms of \( C \) and \( X \): we have

\[
\begin{align*}
\frac{X'}{X} &= \frac{w'_1}{w_1} + \frac{w'_2}{w_2}, \\
\frac{C}{X} &= \frac{w'_2}{w_2} - \frac{w'_1}{w_1},
\end{align*}
\]

hence

\[
\begin{align*}
\frac{w'_1}{w_1} &= \frac{X' - C}{2X}, \\
\frac{w'_2}{w_2} &= \frac{X' + C}{2X}.
\end{align*}
\]

In particular,

\[
(7.1.3) \quad w_1 = X^{1/2} \exp \left( -\frac{C}{2} \int \frac{dz}{X} \right), \quad w_2 = X^{1/2} \exp \left( \frac{C}{2} \int \frac{dz}{X} \right).
\]

From

\[
\left( \frac{X' + C}{2X} \right)' = \left( \frac{w'_2}{w_2} \right)' = \frac{w''_2}{w_2} - \left( \frac{w'_2}{w_2} \right)^2 = I - \left( \frac{X' + C}{2X} \right)^2,
\]

one finds easily that

\[
(7.1.4) \quad C^2 = X'^2 - 2X''X + 4IX^2.
\]

Differentiating (7.1.4) we see that the product \( X = w_1 \cdot w_2 \) of any two solutions \( w_1, w_2 \) of the equation (7.1.1) satisfies

\[
(7.1.5) \quad X''' - 4IX' - 2I'X = 0.
\]

This third order ODE is known as the second symmetric power of the equation (7.1.1) and can easily be derived directly. In this way, (7.1.4) is simply the first integral of (7.1.5) with integration factor \(-2X\).

Conversely suppose we have a non-trivial solution \( X \) of the second symmetric square (7.1.5) of (7.1.1). Then the \( X'^2 - 2X''X + 4IX^2 \) is a constant\(^ {24} \) and the constant \( C \) is defined up to sign by (7.1.4), so we get a pair of functions \( w_1, w_2 \) defined by (7.1.3). It can be checked easily using (7.1.4) that \( w_1 \) and \( w_2 \) are indeed solutions of the equation (7.1.1).

\(^ {24} \)Of course if this constant is zero, then the functions \( w_1, w_2 \) defined by (7.1.3) are linearly dependent.
Remark 7.2. The product $X = w_1 \cdot w_2$ has appeared implicitly in our previous discussions, in the sense that there exists a developing map for a solution of the mean field equation $\triangle u + e^u = 8\pi n \delta_0$ whose logarithmic derivative is equal to $-C/X$ for some non-zero constant $C$. To see this, recall that for any given solution of the above mean field equation on $\mathbb{C}/\Lambda$, there exist two independent solutions of a Lamé equation

$$
\frac{d^2 w}{dz^2} - (n(n+1)\wp(z; \Lambda) + B)w = 0
$$

such that $w_1/w_2 = :f$ is a developing map of $u$. Then

$$
(7.2.1) \quad \mathcal{G} := \frac{f'}{f} = \frac{(w'_1 w_2 - w_1 w'_2)/w_2^2}{w_1/w_2} = \frac{-C}{w_1 w_2} = \frac{-C}{X}.
$$

We start with the analytic approach of Hermite-Halphen; c.f. [22, p. 499] and [54, §23.7].

Theorem 7.3. Let $n \geq 1$ be a positive integer.

(i) There exist polynomials $S_1(B), S_2(B), S_3(B), \ldots, S_n(B)$ in $B$ with coefficients in $\mathbb{Q}[g_2(\Lambda), g_3(\Lambda)]$ with the following properties:

- for every element $[a] = \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\} \in Y_n$ and any $i = 1, \ldots, n$, the $i$-th elementary polynomial $\{\wp(a_1; \Lambda), \ldots, \wp(a_n; \Lambda)\}$ is equal to $S_i(B[a])$, where $B[a] := (2n - 1) \sum_{i=1}^n \wp(a_i; \Lambda)$.

- $S_1(B) = (2n - 1)^{-1}B$, and $S_i(B)$ is of degree $i$ with leading coefficients in $\mathbb{Q}^x$ for $i = 2, \ldots, n$.

- $S_i(B)$ is homogenous of weight $i$ for $i = 2, \ldots, n$ if $B, g_2, g_3$ are given weights $1, 2, 3$ respectively.

(ii) The fibers of the map $\pi : Y_n \to \mathbb{C}$ defined by

$$
\pi : \{(x_i, y_i)\}_{i=1}^n \mapsto B[a] = (2n - 1) \sum_{i=1}^n x_i
$$

are orbits of the involution $\iota : [a] \mapsto [-a]$ on $Y_n$. In other words

$$
\pi^{-1}(B[a]) = \{[a], [-a]\} \quad \forall [a] \in Y_n.
$$

The subset $X_n \subset Y_n$ is the complement in $Y_n$ of the fixed point set $(Y_n)^\iota$ of the involution $\iota$; it is also equal to the subset of $Y_n$ consisting of all elements $[a] = \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\} \in Y_n$ such that $\wp(a_i; \Lambda) \neq 0$ for all $i$ and $\wp(a_i; \Lambda) \neq \wp(a_j; \Lambda)$ for all pairs $(i, j)$ with $i \neq j$ and $1 \leq i, j \leq n$. Moreover $X_n$ is a locally closed smooth one-dimensional complex submanifold of $\text{Sym}^n(\mathbb{C}/\Lambda)$.

(iii) The set $(Y_n)^\iota = Y_n \setminus X_n$ is a finite subset of $Y_n$ with at most $2n + 1$ elements. Up to $\mathbb{C}^\times$ the set of all ansatz functions $w_a(z)$ with $[a] \in Y_n$ coincides with the set of all Lamé functions of index $n$. In other words $Y_n = Y_n \setminus X_n$ is in natural bijection with the set of all Lamé functions of index $n$ up to non-zero constants.
(iv) The closure $\bar{X}_n$ of $X_n$ in $\text{Sym}^n(C/\Lambda)$ consists of $Y_n$ and a single “point at infinity” $[0]^n := \{[0], \ldots, [0]\}$: $\bar{X}_n = Y_n \cup \{0\}$.

(v) The map $\pi : Y_n \to C$ extends to a surjective continuous map $\pi : \bar{X}_n \to \mathbb{P}^1(C)$ which sends the point $[0]^n$ to $\infty \in \mathbb{P}^1(C)$.

7.3.1. Proof of Theorem 7.3 (i). Consider the Weierstrass equation $y^2 = p(x) = 4x^3 - g_2x - g_3$, where $(x, y) = (\wp(z), \wp'(z))$, and we set $(x, y_i) = (\wp(a_i), \wp'(a_i))$ for $[a] = \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\} \in Y_n$. Pick $a_i \in [a_i]$ for $i = 1, \ldots, n$. Consider the following pair of ansatz solutions $\Lambda_a(z)$, $\Lambda_{-a}(z)$ the Lamé equation

\begin{equation}
\frac{d^2 w}{dz^2} - (n(n + 1)\wp(z; \Lambda) + B)w = 0,
\end{equation}

where

\begin{equation}
\Lambda_a(z) := \frac{w_a(z)}{\prod_{i=1}^n \sigma(a_i)} = e^{\Sigma \xi(a_i)} \prod_{i=1}^n \frac{\sigma(z - a_i)}{\sigma(z)\sigma(a_i)}.
\end{equation}

Let $\bar{X}_{[a]}(z) = \Lambda_a(z)\Lambda_{-a}(z)$ be the product of this pair. Note that if $[a] \notin X_n$ then $[a] = [-a]$ by Proposition 6.6 and $\Lambda_a = \Lambda_{-a}$. From the addition theorem we have

\begin{equation}
\bar{X}_a(z) = (-1)^n \prod_{i=1}^n \frac{\sigma(z + a_i; \Lambda)\sigma(z - a_i; \Lambda)}{\sigma(z; \Lambda)^2\sigma(a_i; \Lambda)^2}
\end{equation}

\begin{equation}
= (-1)^n \prod_{i=1}^n (\wp(z; \Lambda) - \wp(a_i; \Lambda)) = X(\wp(z; \Lambda))
\end{equation}

That is $\bar{X}_{[a]}(z) = X_{[a]}(\wp(z; \Lambda))$, where

\begin{equation}
X_{[a]}(x) = (-1)^n \prod_{i=1}^n (x - \wp(a_i; \Lambda)).
\end{equation}

a polynomial of degree $n$ in the variable $x$.

We know that $\bar{X}_{[a]}(z)$ satisfies the second symmetric power of the Lamé equation (7.3.1)

\begin{equation}
\frac{d^3 \bar{X}}{dz^3} - 4(n(n + 1)\wp(z; \Lambda) + B)\frac{d \bar{X}}{dz} - 2n(n + 1)\wp'(z, \Lambda)\bar{X}(z) = 0,
\end{equation}

it is thus a **polynomial solution** in the variable $x$, to the algebraic form

\begin{equation}
p(x) \frac{d^3 X}{dx^3} + \frac{3}{2} \frac{dp}{dx} \frac{d^2 X}{dx^2} - 4((n^2 + n - 3)x + B) \frac{dX}{dx} - 2n(n + 1)X = 0,
\end{equation}

of (7.3.4), where $p(x)$ is the cubic polynomial

\begin{equation}
p(x) = 4x^3 - g_2(\Lambda)x - g_3
\end{equation}

in the Weierstrass equation for $C/\Lambda$. As a result, $X_{[a]}(x)$ will be determined by $B$ and certain initial conditions.
Indeed, write \( X_{[\mu]}(x) = (-1)^n(x^n - s_1x^{n-1} + \cdots + (-1)^n s_n) \), then (7.3.5) translates into a linear recursive relation for each \( \mu = n-1, \ldots, 0 \), where we \( s_0 = 1 \) by convention:

\[
0 = 2(n - \mu)(2\mu + 1)(n + \mu + 1)s_{n-\mu} - 4(\mu + 1)Bs_{n-\mu-1} + \frac{1}{2}g_2(\mu + 1)(\mu + 2)(2\mu + 3)s_{n-\mu-2} - g_3(\mu + 1)(\mu + 2)(\mu + 3)s_{n-\mu-3}.
\]

(7.3.6)

Since \( B = (2n - 1)s_1 \), the initial relation for \( \mu = n-1 \) is automatic. Let \( S_1(B) := (2n - 1)^{-1}B \). The recursive relations (7.3.6) with \( s_j \) substituted by \( S_j(B) \) define polynomials \( S_2(B), \ldots, S_n(B) \in \mathbb{Q}[g_2, g_3] \) which satisfy the first condition listed in 7.3 (i). Moreover we see from the recursive relations that \( S_j \) is a polynomial of degree \( j \) in \( B \), and it is homogenous of weight \( n \) if \( B, g_2, g_3 \) are given weights 1, 2, 3 respectively, for \( j = 1, \ldots, n \). We have proved Theorem 7.3 (i).

\[\square\]

7.3.2. Proof of Theorem 7.3 (ii). The first sentence of 7.3 (ii) is a restatement of Proposition 6.4. We give another proof here more in line with the proof of (i). Suppose now we have two elements

\[ [a] = \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\}, \quad [b] = \{[b_1], \ldots, [b_n]\} \in Y_n \]

such that

\[ \sum_{i=1}^{n} \varphi(a_i; \Lambda) = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \varphi(a_i'; \Lambda). \]

Let \( X_{[a]}(x) \) be the polynomial in \( x \) of degree \( n \) such that \( X_{[a]}(\varphi(z; \Lambda)) = \Lambda_a(z)\Lambda_{-a}(z) \); similarly let \( X_{[b]}(\varphi(z; \Lambda)) = \Lambda_b(z)\Lambda_{-b}(z) \). Then \( X_{[a]} \) and \( X_{[b]} \) both satisfy the same equation (7.3.5), and we get from the recursive relations (7.3.6) that \( X_{[a]} = X_{[b]} \), i.e.

\[ \prod_{i=1}^{n}(x - \varphi(a_i; \Lambda)) = \prod_{i=1}^{n}(x - \varphi(b_i; \Lambda)). \]

Therefore \( \{\varphi(a_1; \Lambda), \ldots, \varphi(a_n; \Lambda)\} = \{\varphi(b_1; \Lambda), \ldots, \varphi(b_n; \Lambda)\} \) as unordered lists.

We claim that either \( [a] = [b] \) or \( [a] = [-b] \) as unordered lists. Otherwise after renumbering the \( a_i \)'s and the \( b_i \)'s, there exist integers \( r, s \geq 1 \) with \( r + s \leq n \) such that the following hold:

(i) \( [a_i] = [b_i] \in \frac{1}{2}\Lambda/\Lambda \) for all \( i \) such that \( r + s + 1 \leq i \leq n \),

(ii) \( [a_i] \notin \frac{1}{2}\Lambda/\Lambda \) and \( [b_i] \notin \frac{1}{2}\Lambda/\Lambda \), for all \( i \) such that \( 1 \leq i \leq r + s \),

(iii) \( [a_i] = [-b_i] \) for \( i = 1, \ldots, r \),

(iv) \( [a_i] = [b_i] \) for \( i = r + 1, \ldots, r + s \),

(v) \( [a_i] \neq [-a_j] \) if \( i \neq j \) and \( 1 \leq i, j \leq r \).
We know from Theorem 6.5 (0) that \( w_a(z) \) and \( w_b(z) \) are linearly independent because \([a] \neq [-b],\) and they satisfy the same Lamé equation with index \( n \) because \( B_{[a]} = B_{[b]} \). So the Schwarzian derivative of \( w_a/w_b \) is
\[
S(w_a/w_b) = 2(n(n+1)\varphi(z;\Lambda) + B_{[a]}).
\]
On the other hand conditions (i)–(iv) tells us that \( w_a/w_b \) is equal to a non-zero constant times the function \( f_{[c]} = w_c/w_{-c} \), where \([c] = \{c_1, \ldots, c_r\} \), so \( S(f_{[c]}) = 2(n(n+1)\varphi(z;\Lambda) + B_{[a]}) \). The condition (v) above tells us that \([c] \neq [-c],\) so we get from Proposition 6.5 (1) that \( \text{ord}_{z=0} f_{[c]} \leq 2r \leq 2n - 2 \), which implies that \( S(f_{[c]}) \neq 2(n(n+1)\varphi(z;\Lambda) + B_{[a]}) \). We have proved the first sentence of (ii): if \( B_{[a]} = B_{[b]}, [a], [b] \in Y_n \), then either \([a] = [b]\) or \([a] = [-b] \).

The second sentence of 7.3 (ii) is the content of Proposition 6.6. The argument below provides a different proof and also the rest of the statement (ii) at the same time. Suppose that \([a] = \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\} \) is a given point of \( Y_n \). As 7.1, we know that
\[
\left( \frac{d}{dz} X_{[a]}(\varphi(z;\Lambda)) \right)^2 - 2 X_{[a]}(\varphi(z;\Lambda)) \frac{d^2}{dz^2} X_{[a]}(\varphi(z;\Lambda)) + 4 \left( n(n+1)\varphi(z;\Lambda) + B_{[a]} \right) X_{[a]}(\varphi(z;\Lambda))^2
\]
(7.3.7)
is a constant because its derivative vanishes identically; write this constant as \( C^2 \). This constant \( C^2 \) can be evaluated by plugging in \( z = a_i \) in equation (7.3.7), for any \( i \) with \( 1 \leq i \leq n \):
\[
C^2 = \left( \frac{dX_{[a_i]}^x}{dx} \right)_{x=a_i} \cdot \varphi(a_i;\Lambda)
\]
for each \( i = 1, \ldots, n \).

Suppose that \( C^2 = 0 \). We know from 7.1 that \( w_a \) and \( w_{-a} \) are linearly dependently, therefore \([a] = [-a] \). The above argument also tells us that \( \pi^{-1}(B_{[a]}) \) is the singleton \( \{[a]\} \). In this case \( w_a(z) \) is a Lamé function of index \( n \): up to \( \mathbb{C}^* \) it is a square root of \( X_{[a]}(\varphi(z;\Lambda)) \), a polynomial of degree \( n \) in \( \varphi(z;\Lambda) \). We also see that \([a] \notin X_n \) because for each \( i \) we know that either \( \varphi^{'}(a_i;\Lambda) = 0 \) or \( \varphi(a_i;\Lambda) \) is a multiple root of \( X_{[a]}(x) \).

On the other hand, suppose that \( C^2 \neq 0 \). Then
\[
\varphi(a_i;\Lambda) \neq 0 \quad \text{and} \quad \left. \frac{dX_{[a]}^{x}}{dx} \right|_{x=a_i} \neq 0 \quad \text{for} \quad i = 1, \ldots, n.
\]
Therefore \([a] \neq [-a], \) and \([a], [-a] \in X_n \). After making a choice of a square root \( C \) of \( C^2, \) one can “pick out” \([a]\) from the pair \( \{[a], [-a]\} \) using \( C \) and \( \{\varphi(a_1;\Lambda), \ldots, \varphi(a_n;\Lambda)\} \), by
\[
C = \left. \frac{dX_{[a]}^{x}}{dx} \right|_{x=a_i} \cdot \varphi(a_i;\Lambda)
\]
(7.3.8)
The above formula shows that the map \( \pi : Y_n \to \mathbb{C} \) is a local isomorphism near \([a] \) and \([-a] \). The procedure reviewed in 7.1 tells us that the pair of
ansatz functions \( w_a, w_{-a} \) are determined up to \( \mathbb{C}^\times \) by \( X_a(x) \), so \( \pi^{-1}(B_{[a]} = \{ [a], [-a] \} \) in this case. We have proved Theorem 7.3 (ii). \( \square \)

**Remark 7.3.3.** The proofs of 7.3 (i) and (ii) employed the method in [22, pp. 498–500] and [54, pp. 570–572] which gives a recursive formula for the product of a pair of ansatz solutions \( w_a \) and \( w_{-a} \) in terms of the auxiliary parameter \( B_{[a]} \), then bootstrap to find the ansatz pair \( w_a, w_{-a} \).

The ansatz solutions parametrized by \( Y_n \) are eigenfunctions for the translation action of the lattice \( \Lambda \), and they are also eigenfunction for the differential operator \( \frac{d^2}{dz^2} - n(n + 1)\wp(z; \Lambda) \). In this sense \( Y_n \) can be regarded as the spectral curve of this second order differential operator.

Theorem 7.3 (v) asserts that for every \( B \in \mathbb{C} \) there exist an element \( [a] \in Y_n \) such that \( B_{[a]} = B \). We discuss the dichotomy whether \( \pi : Y_n \to \mathbb{C} \) is ramified above \( B \) from the perspective of the translation action of \( \Lambda \) on the solution space of the Lamé equation \( L_{n,B_{[a]}} \).

1. **CASE** \([a] \in X_n\), equivalently \([a] \neq [-a]\). In this case \( \mathbb{C} \cdot w_a \) and \( \mathbb{C} \cdot w_{-a} \) are one-dimensional spaces of solutions of the same Lamé equation \( L_{n,B_{[a]}} \) but their eigenvalue packages for the translation action by \( \Lambda \) are different, hence the ansatz solutions \( \mathbb{C} \cdot w_a \) and \( \mathbb{C} \cdot w_{-a} \) are intrinsic to the Lamé equation \( L_{n,B_{[a]}} \).

2. **CASE** \([a] \notin X_n\), equivalently \([a] = [-a]\). The assumption that \([a] \notin X_n\) is equivalent to \([a] = [-a]\). We have seen in the proof of 7.3 (ii) that up to a non-zero constant \( w_a(z) \) is a square root of a polynomial of \( \wp(z; \Lambda) \); in other words \( w_a \) is a Lamé function. In this case the action of \( \Lambda \) on the space of solutions of the Lamé equation \( L_{n,B_{[a]}} \) is not diagonalizable, and the Lamé functions \( \mathbb{C} \cdot w_a \) are the only \( \Lambda \)-eigenfunctions among the space of solutions of the Lamé equation \( L_{n,B_{[a]}} \).

**7.3.4. PROOF OF THEOREM 7.3 (iii).** We have seen in the last paragraph of Remark 7.3.3 that \( (Y_n)^t \) is in natural bijection with the set of all Lamé functions of index \( n \) up to \( \mathbb{C}^\times \). One knows from classical literature that there exists a polynomial \( \ell_n(B) \in \mathbb{Q}[g_2(\Lambda), g_3(\Lambda)] \) of degree \( 2n + 1 \) in the variable \( B \), explicitly defined by recursion, whose roots are precisely the \( B_{[a]} \)'s with \([a] \in (Y_n)^t\); see Theorem B in §0. Theorem 7.3 (iii) follows.

The definition of this polynomial \( \ell_n(B) \) will be reviewed in the proof of Theorem 7.4. It is known that \( \ell_n(B) \) has \( 2n + 1 \) distinct real roots when the lattice has the form \( \Lambda = \mathbb{Z} + \sqrt{-1}t\mathbb{Z} \) for some \( t \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \). This fact is stated on line 13, page 221 Liouville’s letter [39], where Liouville said that one can use Sturm’s method to prove that the polynomial \( \ell_n(B) \), written as \( R(B) \) in loc. cit., has \( 2n + 1 \) (real) roots and therefore there are \( 2n + 1 \) Lamé functions. The proof in [22, pp. 471–476] goes through a change of variable \( u = 2v, \ y = \wp'(v; \Lambda) \), which has the advantage that every Lamé function is rationally expressible in terms of \( \wp(v; \Lambda) \) and \( \wp'(v; \Lambda) \); this proof is sketched in [45, p. 163]. In [54, §23.41] Lamé functions “of the third kind”
(in the case when \( n \) is even) is discussed, with the other three cases left as exercises. Sturm’s method, in the form of Corollary 3.3.4, was used in all references above. \( \square \)

7.3.5. **Proof of Theorem 7.3 (iv)–(v).**

Suppose that \([a] = \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\}\) is a point of \( \bar{X}_n \). By definition there exists a sequence \([a][k] = \{[a_{k,1}], \ldots, [a_{k,n}]\}\) \( \in X_n \) which converges as \( k \to \infty \). Let \( B_k = B_{[a][k]} = (2n-1) \sum_{i=1}^{n} \wp(a_{k,i}; \Lambda) \). Then \( B := \lim_{k \to \infty} B_k \) exists as an element of \( C \cup \{\infty\} = \mathbb{P}^1(C) \). Let \( X_k(x) = X_{[a][k]}(x) \) be the polynomial of degree \( n \) in \( x \) determined by \( B_k \) through the recursive relation (7.3.6). We discuss the two case (a) \( B \in C \) and (b) \( B = \infty \in \mathbb{P}^1(C) \).

(a) Suppose that \( B \neq \infty \). By (7.3.6) the coefficients \( s_j(B_k) \) of \( X_k(x) \) are uniformly bounded for \( j = 1, \ldots, n \). Thus the roots \( x_{k,j} = \wp(a_{k,i}; \Lambda) \in C \) of \( X_k(x) \) are uniformly bounded as well. This implies that \( a_i \notin \Lambda \) for \( i = 1, \ldots, n \), \( w_{a[i]} \to w_{a[i]} \), \( [a] \to [a] \) in \( \text{Sym}^n(C/\Lambda) \), and \( w_{a} \) is a non-trivial solution of the Lamé equation \( w'' = (n(n+1)\wp(z; \Lambda) + B)w \). Notice that we must have \( a_i \neq a_j \) whenever \( i \neq j \). For otherwise \( w_{a}(z) \) has multiplicity at least 2 at \( z = a_i \), which implies that \( w_{a} \) is identically zero, a contradiction. We conclude that \( [a] \in Y_n \).

(b) Suppose that \( B = \infty \). We claim that \( \{a_{k,i}\} \to [0] \) for all \( i = 1, \ldots, n \). Change the variable to \( t = x^{-1} \). Look at the polynomial

\[
Y_k(y) := S_n(B_k)^{-1} \cdot y^n \cdot X_{[a][k]}(y^{-1})
\]

\[
= y^n - \frac{S_{n-1}(B_k)}{S_n(B_k)} y^{n-1} + \cdots + (-1)^{n-1} \frac{S_1(B_k)}{S_n(B_k)} + (-1)^n \frac{1}{S_n(B_k)}
\]

whose roots are \( \{\wp(a_{k,i}; \Lambda)^{-1}, \ldots, \wp(a_{k,n}; \Lambda)^{-1}\} \). The assumption that \( B_k \to \infty \) as \( k \to \infty \), tells us that \( Y_k(y) \to y^n \) as \( k \to \infty \), which implies that all the roots \( \wp(a_{k,i})^{-1} \) of \( Y_k(y) \) go to 0 as \( k \to \infty \). Therefore \( a_{k,i} \to 0 \) as \( k \to \infty \) for all \( i = 1, \ldots, n \).

Combining the cases (a) and (b), we draw the following conclusions.

- The map \( \bar{\pi}_n|_{X_n} : X_n \to C \) extends to a continuous map \( \bar{\pi}_n : X_n \to \mathbb{P}^1(C) \).
- The inverse image \( \bar{\pi}_n^{-1}(\infty) \) of the point \( \infty \in \mathbb{P}^1(C) \) under \( \bar{\pi} \) consists of a single point \( [0]^n = \{[0], \ldots, [0]\} \).
- The inverse image \( \bar{\pi}^{-1}(C) \) of \( C \) under \( \bar{\pi} \) is contained in \( Y_n \). In other words \( \bar{X}_n \setminus \{[0]^n\} \subseteq Y_n \).
- Because \( \bar{\pi}_n \) is compact by definition, and we already know that \( \bar{\pi}_n(X_n) \) contains the complement of a finite subset of \( C \), therefore \( \bar{\pi}_n \) is surjective.

We have proved 7.3 (v) and half of 7.3 (iv).

To complete the proof of 7.3 (iv), we need to show that \( (Y_n)^c \subseteq \bar{X}_n \). Let \([a] \in (Y_n)^c \) be a given element of \( Y_n \). We know that there exists an element \([b] \in \bar{X}_n \) such that \( B_{[b]} = B_{[a]} \), and have seen \([b] \in Y_n \). Theorem
Corollary 7.3.6. Let \( ([a_k])_{k \in \mathbb{N}} = ([a_{k,1}], \ldots, [a_{k,n}])_{k \in \mathbb{N}} \) be a sequence of elements in \( X_n \) indexed by \( \mathbb{N} \). If there exists an \( i \) between 1 and \( n \) such that \([a_{k,i}] \to [0] \) in \( \mathbb{C}/\Lambda \), then \([a_{k,i}] \to [0] \) in \( \mathbb{C}/\Lambda \) for all \( i = 1, \ldots, n \).

Remark 7.3.7. The proof of Theorem 7.3 (i) has appeared in [22, p. 499-500]. The proof in [54, §23.7] is essentially the same, except \( X_{[r]}(x) \) is expressed as a polynomial in \( x - e_2 \) and recursive formula was given for the coefficients of powers of \( x - e_2 \). We may compare our argument with [54, §23.7] on such a polynomial solution \( X \) to (7.3.5), which is indeed the origin where \( X(x) \) and \( \Lambda_a \) were first found during our study. Let \( X = \sum_{r=0}^{\infty} c_r (x - e_2)^{n-r} \) be a solution of (7.3.5) in descending power. Since \( p(x) = 4(x - e_1)(x - e_2)(x - e_3) \), there is a recursive formula for \( c_r \):

\[
4r(n + \frac{1}{2} - r)(2n + 1 - r)c_r = (n + 1 - r)(12e_2(n - r)(n - 2 - r) - 4e_2(n^2 + n - 3) - 4B)c_{r-1} - 4(n + 1 - r)(n + 2 - r)(e_1 - e_2)(e_2 - e_3)c_{r-2}.
\]

The above recursive formula is slightly different from (7.3.6). Given \( c_0 = 1 \) and \( c_1 \), we can solve \( c_2, \ldots, c_n \) and express them as polynomials in \( c_1 \) and \( B \). The recursive formula force \( c_{n+1} = \cdots = c_{2n} = 0 \). The next coefficient \( c_{2n+1} \) appears as another “free parameter”, and the coefficients of higher order terms are expressed as polynomials of \( c_1 \). The condition that \( X(x) \) is a polynomial is that \( c_l = 0 \) for all \( l \geq n \). Thus \( X(x) \) is a polynomial solution, which is determined by \( c_1 \) and \( B \).

From \( (-1)^n \Lambda_{a^{-1}} \Lambda_{-a} = \prod_{i=1}^{n} ((x - e_2) + (e_2 - x_i)) = \sum_{r=0}^{n} c_r (x - e_2)^{n-r} \), we see that \( c_1 = \sum_{i=1}^{n} (e_2 - x_i) = ne_2 - \sum_{i=1}^{n} x_i = ne_2 - B \). Hence \( X \) is a polynomial in \( B \).

Remark 7.3.8. The statement 7.3 (iv), that \( \hat{X}_n = Y_n \cup \{\infty\} \), does not seem to have appeared in the literature, but this fact must be known as it follows quickly from the method of recovering the ansatz pair \( w_g, w_{-g} \) from their product. The behavior of \( X_n \) or \( Y_n \) at \( B = \infty \) is important, when will be discussed in Proposition 7.5).

We would like to rephrase Theorem 7.3 in purely algebraic terms without appealing to solutions of Lamé equations. It is given below, whose proof uses system (5.6.2) instead of (5.8.1).

Theorem 7.4. Let \( n \geq 1 \) be a positive integer. Let \( S_1, \ldots, S_n \in \mathbb{Q}[g_2, g_3] \) be the polynomials in Theorem 7.3 (i) defined recursively by (7.3.6).

(1) The space \( X_n \) admits a natural projective compactification \( \hat{X}_n \) as a possibly singular, hyperelliptic curve defined by the following equation in \( (B, C) \):

\[
C^2 = \ell_n(B, g_2(\Lambda), g_3(\Lambda)) = 4B^2 + 4g_3(\Lambda)s_{n-2}s_n - g_2(\Lambda)s_{n-1}s_n - g_3(\Lambda)s_{n-1}^2.
\]
(2) The discriminant \( \text{disc}_B(\ell_n(B)) \in \mathbb{Q}[g_2, g_3] \) in the variable \( B \) of the polynomial \( \ell_n(B) \) is a non-zero polynomial in two variables \( g_2, g_3 \); it is homogeneous of weight \( 2n(2n + 1) \) if \( g_2, g_3 \) are given weights 2 and 3 respectively. In other words \( \text{disc}_B(\ell_n(B)) \in \mathbb{Q}[g_2(\Lambda), g_3(\Lambda)] \) is a non-zero modular form of weight \( 4n(2n + 1) \) for the full modular group \( \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z}) \), holomorphic on \( \mathbb{H} \) and also on the cusps.

**Remark.** The polynomial \( \ell_n(B, g_2, g_3) \) has degree \( 2n + 1 \) in the variable \( B \); it is homogeneous of weight \( 2n + 1 \) in \( B, g_2 \) and \( g_3 \) when \( B, g_2, g_3 \) are given weights 1, 2, 3 respectively. The projective curve \( \hat{X}_n \) has arithmetic genus \( n \); it is smooth unless \( \text{disc}_B(\ell_n(B))((\Lambda)) = 0 \).

**Proof.** Let \( p(x) = 4x^3 - g_2x - g_3, q(x) = \prod_{i=1}^{n}(x - x_i) \). The set \( X_n \) is defined by \( 2n - 1 \) polynomial equations

\[
y_i^2 = p(x_i) \quad \forall \ i = 1, \ldots, n \quad \text{and} \quad \sum_{i=1}^{n} x_i^k y_i = 0 \quad \forall \ k = 0, 1, \ldots, n - 2
\]

in the \( 2n \) variables \( x_1, \ldots, x_n; y_1, \ldots, y_n \) and \( n(n + 1)/2 \) inequalities

\[
x_i \neq x_j \quad \forall i \neq j, \ 1 \leq i, j \leq 1 \quad \text{and} \quad y_i \neq 0 \quad \forall i = 1, \ldots, n.
\]

Applying Cramer’s rule to the \( n - 1 \) linear equations \( \sum_{i=1}^{n} x_i^k y_i = 0 \) in \( y_i \)'s, we conclude that there is a constant\(^{25} \) \( C \in \mathbb{C}^* \) such that

\[
y_i = \frac{C}{\prod_{j \neq i}(x_i - x_j)}, \quad i = 1, \ldots, n.
\]

Since \( q'(x_i) = \prod_{j \neq i}(x_i - x_j) \), we get

\[
p(x_i)q'(x_i)^2 = C^2, \quad i = 1, \ldots, n,
\]

and so \( q(x)|(p(x)q'(x)^2 - C^2) \). This implies that there are \( h_1, \ldots, h_n, a, b \in \mathbb{C} \) such that

\[
\frac{p(x)q'(x)^2 - C^2}{q(x)^2} = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{h_i}{(x - x_i)} + ax + b.
\]

It is easy to compute (e.g. using power series expansion of \( p, q \) at \( x_i \))

\[
h_i = \text{Res}_{x=x_i} p(x) \frac{q'(x)^2}{q(x)^2} - \text{Res}_{x=x_i} \frac{C^2}{q(x)^2}
\]

\[
= p'(x_i) + p(x_i) \frac{q''(x_i)}{q'(x_i)} + C^2 \frac{q''(x_i)}{q'(x_i)^3}
\]

\[
= p'(x_i) + 2p(x_i) \frac{q''(x_i)}{q'(x_i)}.
\]

\(^{25}\)This “constant” \( C \) depends on \( n \) and the lattice \( \Lambda \).
From (7.4.3) we get

\begin{equation}
(7.4.5) \quad p(x)q'(x)^2 - C^2 = \sum_{i=1}^{n} h_i \frac{q(x)^2}{(x-x_i)} + (ax + b)q^2(x).
\end{equation}

Comparing coefficients of \(x^{2n+1}\) and \(x^{2n}\) on both sides, we get

\begin{equation}
(7.4.6) \quad a = 4n^2, \quad b = 8n \sum_{i=1}^{n} x_i = 8ns_1
\end{equation}

(recall that \(q(x) = x^n - s_1x^{n-1} + \cdots + (-1)^n s_n\) and so \(s_1 = \sum_{i=1}^{n} x_i\)).

Now, in a similar and easier manner, we write

\begin{equation}
(7.4.7) \quad \frac{p'(x)q'(x)}{q(x)} = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{p'(x_i)}{(x-x_i)} + (12nx + 12s_1),
\end{equation}

\begin{equation}
(7.4.8) \quad \frac{p(x)q''(x)}{q(x)} = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{p(x_i)}{(x-x_i)} \frac{q''(x_i)}{q'(x_i)} + (4(n^2 - 1)x + 8(n-1)s_1).
\end{equation}

Then (7.4.4), (7.4.5), (7.4.6) and (7.4.7) lead to

\begin{equation}
(7.4.9) \quad pq'^2 - p'q'q - 2pq''q + 4(n(n+1)x + (2n-1)s_1)q^2 - C^2 = 0.
\end{equation}

One more differentiation gives

\begin{align*}
0 &= p'q'^2 + 2pq'q'' - p''q'q - p'q''q - p''q'^2 + 2pq''q' - 2pq'''q - 2pq''q' \\
&\quad + 4n(n+1)q^2 + 8(n(n+1)x + (2n-1)s_1)qq' \\
&\quad = -2q(pq''' + \frac{3}{2}p'q'' - 4((n^2 + n - 1)x + B)q' - 2n(n+1)q),
\end{align*}

which is \((-2q)\) times the linear ODE (7.3.5), and so the same recursive relation (7.3.6) shows that \(q\) is determined by \(s_1\).

Suppose we have two different points \(\{\mathbf{x} = \{(x_1, y_1), \ldots, (x_n, y_n)\}\} \mathbf{x}' = \{(x'_1, y'_1), \ldots, (x'_n, y'_n)\}\) in \(X_n\) such that \(\pi_n(\mathbf{x}) = \sum_{i=1}^{n} x_i = \sum_{i=1}^{n} x'_i = \pi_n(\mathbf{y})\), by rearrangement we have \(x_i = x'_j\) for all \(i\) and then \(y'_j = \pm y_i\) for all \(i\). If \(y_i = y'_i\) for some \(i\), then by (7.4.1),

\[ \frac{C'}{\prod_{j \neq i} (x'_i - x'_j)} = \frac{C}{\prod_{j \neq i} (x_i - x_j)} \]

which implies that \(C = C'\) and \(y_j = y'_j\) for all \(j\), a contradiction. Hence \(y_i = -y'_i\) for all \(i\). We have shown that if two different points \(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x}'\) of \(X_n\) have the same image in \(C\) under the map \(\pi_n\), then \(\mathbf{x}' = i(\mathbf{x})\), where \(i\) is the involution on \(X_n\) defined by “multiplication by \(-1\)” on \(C/\Lambda\).

The constant terms in formula (7.4.8) leads to

\begin{equation}
(7.4.9) \quad C^2 = \ell_n(B) = 4Bs_n^2 + 4g_{3s_n - 2s_n} - g_{2s_{n-1} - s_n} - g_{3s_n^2 - 1},
\end{equation}

where \(s_k = s_k(B)\) is a polynomial of degree \(k\) and \(B = (2n - 1)s_1\). Thus \(\deg \ell_n = 2n + 1\). Equation (7.4.9) provides a natural algebraic (hyperelliptic) compactification \(\hat{X}_n\) of \(X_n\).
To make this precise, we show that \(X_n\) is mapped onto those \(B \in \mathbb{C}\) with \(C^2 = \ell_n(B) \neq 0\). Indeed we define \(s_k\) by \(s_k(B)\) and \(x_i\)'s by \(q(x) = x^n - s_1 x^{n-1} + \cdots + (-1)^n s_n = \prod_{i=1}^n (x - x_i)\). Then (7.4.8) holds and by substituting \(x = x_i\) we get \(p(x_i)q'(x_i)^2 = C^2\) as in (7.4.2).

If \(C \neq 0\), we get \(p(x_i) \neq 0\) and \(q'(x_i) \neq 0\) which give the non-degenerate conditions. Now we define

\[
y_i := \frac{C}{q'(x_i)} = \frac{C}{\prod_{j \neq i} (x_i - x_j)} \neq 0, \quad i = 1, \ldots, n.
\]

Then \(y_i^2 = p(x_i)\) and \(\{(x_i, y_i)\}\) solves equations \(\sum_{i=1}^n x_i^k y_i = 0\) for \(k = 0, \ldots, n - 2\), hence gives rise to a point in \(X_n\).

If \(C = 0\), we have either \(p(x_i) = 0\) or \(q'(x_i) = 0\) for all \(i = 1, \ldots, n\). Let \(x_i = \varphi(a_i)\). In the former case \(a_i = -a_i\) is a half period and \(y_i = 0\). In the latter case \(x_i = x_j\) for some \(j \neq i\). Notice that \(\{(x_i, y_i)\}\) still satisfies the equations \(\sum_{i=1}^n x_i^k y_i = 0\) for \(k = 0, \ldots, n - 2\) since they define a closed set. Now the same argument in the proof of Theorem 6.5 shows that \([a] = [-a]\), where \([a] = \{[a_1], \ldots, [a_n]\}\).

If \(B \to \infty\), then the first \(n\) elementary symmetric polynomials for the unordered list \(x_1^{-1}, \ldots, x_n^{-1}\) all go to \(0\), because the \(i\)-th elementary symmetric polynomial in \(x_1^{-1}, \ldots, x_n^{-1}\) is \(\frac{y_i}{s_n}\) for \(i = 1, \ldots, n\). Since \(x_i = \varphi(a_i)\), we get \(a_i \to 0\) for all \(i\). That is, \(\pi^{-1}(\infty) = (0, \ldots, 0)\).

We have proved 7.4 (1) at this point. The statement 7.4 (2) is a consequence of the second paragraph of 7.3.4 in the proof of Theorem 7.3 (iii). There we recalled that for a rectangular lattice \(\Lambda_\tau\) with \(\tau \in \sqrt{-1} \mathbb{R}_{>0}\), the polynomial \(\ell_n(B; \Lambda_\tau)\) in \(B\) has \(2n + 1\) distinct real roots, and gave references for this fact. Clearly this fact implies that the discriminant of \(\ell_n(B)\) is not identically zero. Theorem 7.4 (2) follows. \(\square\)

**Example 7.4.1.** For \(n = 1, s_0 = 1, s_1 = B\) and then

\[
C^2 = \ell_1(B) = 4B^3 - g_2B - g_3
\]

which is exactly the equation for \(E\), since \(X_1 \cong E\).

For \(n = 2, s_0 = 1, s_1 = \frac{1}{2}B, s_2 = \frac{1}{2}B^2 - \frac{1}{4}g_2\), and then

\[
C^2 = \ell_2(B) = \frac{4}{81}B^5 - \frac{7}{27}g_2B^3 + \frac{1}{3}g_3B^2 + \frac{1}{3}g_2^2B - g_2g_3
= \frac{1}{81}(B^2 - 3g_2)(4B^3 - 9g_2B + 27g_3).
\]

In terms of \(s_1\), it is \(C^2 = \ell_2(3s_1) = (3s_1^2 - g_2)(4s_1^3 - g_2s_1 + g_3)\).

For \(n = 3, s_0 = 1, s_1 = \frac{1}{3}B, s_2 = \frac{2}{75}B^2 - \frac{1}{4}g_2, s_3 = \frac{1}{9\sqrt{5}}B^3 - \frac{1}{3\sqrt{6}}g_2B + \frac{1}{3\sqrt{5}}g_3\), and then

\[
C^2 = \ell_3(B)
= \frac{1}{54\sqrt{5}}B(16B^6 - 504g_2B^4 + 2376g_3B^3
+ 4185g_2^2B^2 - 36450g_2g_3B + 91125g_3^2 - 3375g_2^3)
= s_1(\frac{500}{81} - \frac{70}{9}g_2s_1^4 + \frac{22}{3}g_3s_1^3 + \frac{31}{12}g_2^2s_1^2 - \frac{9}{2}g_2g_3s_1 + \frac{9}{4}g_3 - \frac{1}{6}g_2^3).\]
**Remark 7.4.2** (Meaning of the parameter $C$). We have introduced the same notation $C$ in various places. Indeed they are all equivalent: The constant $C$ in (7.4.1) coincides with the constant $C$ in (5.6.4) by setting $w = x_i = \varphi(a_i)$ in (5.6.4). It also coincide with the Wronskian $C$ defined in (7.1.2) up to sign by comparing (7.2.1) with the expression of $g(z)$ in (5.6.3) (using (5.6.4) and (7.3.3)). These equivalences allow us to study the hyperelliptic curve $Y_n$ from both the analytic and algebraic point of views at the same time.

**Remark 7.4.3** (Relation to KdV theory). There are several methods for computing compute $\ell_n(B)$ in the literature, e.g. [16, 52]. It is also interesting to note that the hyperelliptic curve $\hat{X}_n$ also appears in the study of KdV equations, where it is known as the spectral curve.

Indeed in KdV theory, a differential operator $P_{2n+1}$ of order $2n + 1$ is constructed by

$$P_{2n+1} = \sum_{l=0}^{n} (f_{n-l}^l(z) - \frac{1}{2} f_{n-l}^1(z)) L^l,$$

where $L = - \frac{d^2}{dz^2} + u(z)$, $f_0(z) = 1$ and $f_k(z)$ satisfies the recursive relation

$$(7.4.10) \quad f_{k+1}' = -\frac{1}{4} f_k''' + u f_k' + \frac{1}{4} u' f_k, \quad k = 0, 1, 2, \ldots$$

Using the recursion (7.4.10), we have

$$[P_{2n+1}, L] = 2 f_{n+1}' .$$

A potential $u(z)$ is called a stationary solution to an $n$-th KdV hierarchy equation if $f_{n+1}' = 0$. Let

$$F(z; E) = \sum_{l=0}^{n} f_{n-l}(z) E^l.$$

Then $F(z; E)$ satisfies

$$(7.4.11) \quad F''' - 4(u - E) F' - 2u' F = 0 .$$

Conversely, if $F(z; E)$ is a monic polynomial in $E$ of degree $n$ and satisfies (7.4.11), write $F(z; E) = \sum_{l=0}^{n} f_{n-l}(z) E^l$. Then $f_k(z)$ satisfies (7.4.10) with $f_k = 0$ for $k \geq n + 1$. By integrating (7.4.11), we obtain

$$(7.4.12) \quad \frac{1}{2} F'' F - \frac{1}{2} (F')^2 - (u - E) F^2 = R_{2n+1}(E),$$

where $R_{2n+1}(E)$ is independent of $z$ and is a monic polynomial in $E$ of degree $2n + 1$. The spectral curve for the potential $u$, if $u$ is a stationary solution of the $n$-th KdV hierarchy, is by definition the hyperelliptic curve

$$y^2 = R_{2n+1}(E);$$

it parametrizes one-dimensional eigenspaces of the commutator subring of the differential operator $L$ in the space of ordinary differential operators.

If $u(z) = n(n + 1) \varphi(z)$ is the Lamé potential and $B = -E$, then (7.4.11) is identical to (7.3.4) with $F(z; E) = X(z)$. As we have seen already, $X(z)$ is also a polynomial in $\varphi(z)$. By using $x = \varphi(z)$, (7.4.8) is identical to (7.4.12).
Instead, we use (7.4.1) in its analytic form.

In the literature, the Lamé potential is also known as a finite gap potential (e.g. [26, 17, 27, 40, 42]), or equivalently a Picard potential [21]. From the viewpoint of Picard potentials, the system of equations (5.7.4) (i.e. equations for $Y$) also appeared in [20, (3.8) in p.82]. According to [20], that was the first time when (5.7.4) appeared in the KdV theory. However, a comment form [20, p.83] said that the conditions (5.7.4) appear to be too difficult to be handled directly, so they turned to develop another method to compute the spectral curve.

The following proposition arises from the study of the process $B \to \infty$. When $x_i \to \infty$, we have $y_j \to \infty$ too. Asymptotically $(x_i, y_i) \sim (t_i^2, 2t_i^3)$ hence $\sum x_i^k y_i \sim 2 \sum t_i^{3+2k}$. The uniqueness of $\tilde{\pi}^{-1}(\infty)$ suggests the uniqueness of solutions of the limiting equations up to permutations. It turns out to be true and can be proved along the similar reasoning as above.

**Proposition 7.5.** Consider the following system of $n - 1$ homogeneous equations in $\mathbb{P}^{n-1}$ ($n \geq 2$) with coordinates $t_1, \ldots, t_n$:

$$\sum_{i=1}^{n} t_i^{2k+1} = 0, \quad k = 1, 2, \ldots, n - 1,$$

subject to the non-degenerate conditions $\prod_{i=1}^{n} t_i \neq 0$ and $\prod_{i<j} (t_i + t_j) \neq 0$. Then the solution exists uniquely up to permutations.

**Proof.** When $B \to \infty$, by either (7.3.9) or (7.4.2) we see that all $t_i$’s have the same order $|B|^{1/2}$. Since the polynomial system in $t_i$’s comes from the leading order terms of the original system $\sum x_i^k y_i = 0$, by passing to a subsequence if necessary, in the limit $B \to \infty$ we get a point $[t_1 : \ldots : t_n] \in \mathbb{P}^{n-1}$ solving the limiting equations. In fact $[t] \in \mathbb{P}(T_0(\mathcal{X}_n)) \subset \mathbb{P}(T_0(\text{Sym}^n E))$.

However a more careful argument is needed to verify the nondegeneracy conditions. We recall that for $a \in X_n$, $\varphi(a_i)$’s are the roots of the polynomial $X(x)$ where the coefficients $s_i(B)$’s satisfy the recursive relation (7.3.6). Thus $\varphi(a_i)/B$ tends to the roots of the limiting polynomial $X_\infty$:

$$X_\infty(x) = x^n - s_1 x^{n-1} + s_2 x^{n-2} + \cdots + (-1)^{n} s_n,$$

where we set $s_0 = 1$ and

$$s_k = \frac{2(n-k+1)}{k(2n-2k+1)(2n-k+1)} s_{k-1}, \quad k = 1, \ldots, n. \quad (7.5.1)$$

To prove $(\varphi(a_i) - \varphi(a_j))/B \to 0$ as $B \to \infty$ is equivalent to showing that $X_\infty$ has $n$ distinct roots, a statement which does not seem to be obvious. Instead, we use (7.4.1) in its analytic form

$$C = \varphi'(a_i) \prod_{j \neq i} (\varphi(a_i) - \varphi(a_j)). \quad (7.5.2)$$
Obviously $|C| \sim |B|^{n+1/2}$ and $|\varphi'(a_i)| \sim |\varphi(a_i)|^{3/2} \sim |B|^{3/2}$. Thus if there
is some $j$ such that $|\varphi(a_i) - \varphi(a_j)| = o(1)|B|$ as $|B| \to \infty$ then (7.5.2) yields

$$|B|^{n+1/2} \sim |C| \leq o(1)|B|^{n+1/2},$$

which is a contradiction. Therefore we have

$$\lim_{B \to \infty} \frac{\varphi(a_i)}{B} \neq \lim_{B \to \infty} \frac{\varphi(a_j)}{B}$$

for $i \neq j$. Now we write $(\varphi(a_i), \varphi'(a_i)) = (x_i, y_i) \sim (t_i^2, 2t_i^3)$. Then the
leading term of $\sum x_i^k y_i$ is $2\sum t_i^{2k+3}$ for $k = 0, \ldots, n - 2$. By passing to $B \to \infty$, the limit of $t_i/|B|^{1/2}$ (still denoted by $t_i$) then satisfies

$$\sum_{i=1}^n t_i^{2k+1} = 0, \quad 1 \leq k \leq n - 1,$$

and $t_i + t_j \neq 0$ for any $i, j$. This proves the existence of solutions.

The remaining task is to prove the uniqueness. While it may be possible

to prove this by working harder on the asymptotic equations, however, owing to its elementary nature, we will offer a purely elementary argument using only basic algebra and divisions.

Before we proceed, notice that the loci $\prod t_i = 0$ or $\prod_{i < j}(t_i + t_j) = 0$ provide positive dimensional solutions to the system. Thus it is crucial to analyze the non-degenerate conditions. By a Vandermonde-like determinant argument, it is easy to see that under the assumption $t_i \neq 0$ for all $i$, we have $t_i \neq -t_j$ for all $i \neq j$ if and only if $t_i^2 \neq t_j^2$ for all $i \neq j$.

Let $q(t) = \prod_{i=1}^n (t-t_i) = \sum_{i=0}^n (-1)^i s_{i} t^{n-i}$, where $s_{i}$ is the $i$-th elementary symmetric polynomial in $t_i$'s, and $p_{l} = \prod_{i=1}^n t_i^{l}$ being the Newton symmetric polynomial for all $l \geq 0$. Then

$$\frac{q'(t)}{q(t)} + \frac{q'(-t)}{q(-t)} = \sum_{i=1}^n \frac{1}{t-t_i} - \frac{1}{t+t_i} = 2 \sum_{m \geq 1} p_{2m-1} t^{-2m}.$$ 

The conditions $p_3 = p_5 = \cdots = p_{2n-1} = 0$ imply that (comparing degrees)

$$\frac{q'(t)}{q(t)} + \frac{q'(-t)}{q(-t)} = \frac{2p_1}{t^2} + \frac{(-1)^{n} 2 p_{2n+1}}{t^2 q(t) q(-t)}. $$

Denote by $u = t^2, u_i = t_i^2, G(u) = q(t)q(-t) = \prod_{i=1}^n (u - u_i)$, this then
could be regarded as an equality in $C(u)$ as

$$\sum_{i=1}^n \frac{t_i}{u - u_i} = \frac{p_1}{u} + \frac{(-1)^{n} p_{2n+1}}{u G(u)}. $$

From now on we denote $' = d/du$, then

$$t_i = \text{Res}_{u = u_i} \frac{(-1)^{n} p_{2n+1}}{u_i G'(u_i)}. $$
In particular, \( u^3 G'(u_i)^2 = C^2 \) is independent of \( i \), where \( C = (-1)^n p_{2n+1} \). So \( G(u) \mid u^3 G'(u)^2 - C^2 \) and we may perform division to write
\[
\frac{u^3 G'(u)^2 - C^2}{G(u)^2} = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{h_i}{u - u_i} + n^2 u + 2nt_1
\]
for some \( h_i \in \mathbb{C} \) and \( t_1 = \sum_{i=1}^{n} u_i \). Using series expansion in \( u - u_i \) we calculate
\[
\text{Res}_{u=u_i} \frac{u^3 G'(u)^2 - C^2}{G(u)^2} = 3u_i^2 + \frac{2u_i^3 G''(u_i)}{G'(u_i)^2},
\]
hence there are \( a, b \in \mathbb{C} \) such that
\[
\frac{u^3 G'(u)^2 - C^2}{G(u)^2} = \frac{3u^2 G'(u)}{G(u)} + \frac{2u^2 G''(u)}{G(u)} + au + b.
\]
By division again, it is clear that
\[
2u^3 G''(u) = 2(n(n-1)u + 2(n-1)t_1)G(u) + \cdots
\]
and \( 3u^2 G'(u) = 3(nu + t_1)G(u) + \cdots \). Hence
\[
a = -n(n+1), \quad b = -(2n+1)t_1,
\]
\[
\]
Differentiation and simplification lead to \(-G(u)\) times the equation
\[
2u^3 G''' + 9u^2 G'' - 2((n^2 + n - 3)u + (2n-1)t_1)G' - n(n+1)G = 0.
\]
Write \( G(u) = \sum_{i=0}^{n} (-1)^{n-i} \tau_{n-i} u^i \) (so \( \tau_0 = 1 \) and \( \tau_k = 0 \) if \( k < 0 \) or \( k > n \) by convention), the above linear third order ODE translates into the recursive relation:
\[
(i - n)(2i + 1)(i + n + 1)\tau_{n-i} = -2(i + 1)(2n - 1)\tau_1 \tau_{n-i-1}.
\]
This rather short recursion (instead of four terms) is due to the fact that the ODE has an irregular singularity at \( u = 0 \). It is consistent for \( i = n \) (0 = \( \tau_0 \tau_{-1} \)) and for \( i = n - 1 \) (\( \tau_1 = \tau_{-1} \)), and then all \( \tau_k, k \geq 2 \), are completely determined by \( t_1 \). This proves the uniqueness of solution up to permutations.

The non-degenerate conditions are essential. There are always degenerate solutions, which are indeed positive dimensional if \( n \geq 4 \).

**Corollary 7.5.1.** The curve \( \bar{X}_n \) is smooth at the infinity point \([0]^n\).

**Proof.** The idea is that the solutions sought in Proposition 7.5 describe the tangent directions of \( \bar{X}_n \) at \([0]^n\), in the sense that the projectivized tangent cone of \( \bar{X}_n \) at \([0]^n\) is the affine open subset projective spectrum of the ring
\[
\mathcal{R} = \mathbb{C}[t_1, \ldots, t_n] \left/ \left( \sum_{i=1}^{n} t_i^{2k+1} \right)_{1 \leq k \leq n-1} \right.;
\]
associated by localization to the homogeneous element
\[ \prod_{i=1}^{n} t_i \cdot \prod_{1 \leq i < j \leq n} (t_i + t_j) \]
of \( \mathbb{R} \). Once we know this then the existence and uniqueness statement in Proposition 7.5 is equivalent the smoothness of \( \bar{X}_n \) at \( 0^n \). However the above description of the projectivized tangent cone of \( \bar{X}_n \) at \( 0^n \) is not self-evident from the definition of \( \bar{X}_n \) as the closure of \( X_n \) in \( \text{Sym}^n(C/\Lambda) \). So we proceed slightly differently.

Let \( (r_1, \ldots, r_n) \) be a non-degenerate solution of the system of equations in Proposition 7.5. From the non-vanishing of the Vandermonde determinant one sees that \( \sum_{i=1}^{n} r_i \neq 0 \). From Hensel’s lemma one sees that there exists a morphism \( \alpha \) from the spectrum of a formal power series ring \( \mathbb{C}[[t]] \) to the inverse image in \( \text{Sym}^n(C/\Lambda) \) of \( \bar{X}_n \) which sends the closed point of \( \text{Spec} \mathbb{C}[[t]] \) to \( 0^n \), such that
\[ \frac{x_i}{y_i} \mapsto r_i t + O(t^2) \quad \forall \, i = 1, \ldots, n. \]
The condition that \( r_1 + \cdots + r_n \neq 0 \) tells us that \( \alpha \) induces an isomorphism between \( \mathbb{C}[[t]] \) and the completed local ring of \( \bar{X}_n \) at the point \( 0^n \). \( \square \)

7.6. Comparing the compactifications \( \bar{X}_n \) and \( \hat{X}_n \) of \( X_n \).

7.6.1. At this point we have two compactifications of the smooth algebraic curve \( X_n \). We summarize the situation.

7.6.1.a. By definition \( X_n \) is a locally closed algebraic subvariety of the symmetric product \( \text{Sym}^n(C/\Lambda) \). The first compactification \( \bar{X}_n \) of \( X_n \) is the closure of \( X_n \) in \( \text{Sym}^n(C/\Lambda) \). We have seen that \( \bar{X}_n \) contains the closed subvariety \( Y_n \) of \( \text{Sym}^n(C/\Lambda \setminus \{0\}) \). The latter variety \( Y_n \) classifies all ansatz solutions modulo \( \mathbb{C}^\times \) to Lamé equations of index \( n \in \mathbb{N}_{>0} \).

7.6.1.b. The map “multiplication by \(-1\)” on \( C/\Lambda \) defines an involution \( i \) on \( \text{Sym}^n(C/\Lambda) \). The subvarieties \( X_n, Y_n, \bar{X}_n \) of \( \text{Sym}^n(C/\Lambda) \) are stable under the involution \( i \). The restriction of \( i \) to \( X_n \) is an involution \( i \) on \( \bar{X}_n \). It turned out that \( X_n \) is the complement in \( \bar{X}_n \) of the fixed point set \( (\bar{X}_n)^i \) of the involution \( i \). One of the fixed points of \( i \) is the point \( [0]^n = \{[0], \ldots, [0]\} \) of \( \text{Sym}^n(C/\Lambda) \); the rest are all in \( Y_n \). In particular \( \bar{X}_n \setminus Y_n = \{0^n\} \). It is known that \( #(\bar{X}_n)^i \leq 2n + 2 \), and the equality \( #(\bar{X}_n)^i = 2n + 2 \) holds for all \( \Lambda \) outside of a finite number of homothety classes of lattices in \( \mathbb{C} \).

7.6.1.c. The map \( \pi_n : Y_n \to \mathbb{C} \) which sends a point \([a] \in Y_n \) to the accessory parameter \( B[a] \) of the Lamé equation satisfied by the ansatz function \( w_a \) is an algebraic morphism from \( Y_n \) to the affine line \( \mathbb{A}^1 \) over \( \mathbb{C} \). The morphism \( \pi_n : Y_n \to \mathbb{A}^1 \) extends to a morphism \( \bar{\pi}_n : \bar{X}_n \to \mathbb{P}^1 \). This projection morphism \( \bar{\pi}_n \) is compatible with the involution \( i \) in the sense that \( \bar{\pi}_n = \pi_n \circ i \) and \( \bar{\pi}_n(x) = \pi_n(x') \) for two points \( x, x' \in \bar{X}_n \) if and only if either \( x = x' \) or \( i(x) = x' \).
In particular $\pi_n$ induces a bijection from the fixed point set $(\hat{X}_n)^\prime$ to a finite subset $\Sigma_n \subset \mathbb{P}^1$. This ramification locus $\Sigma_n$ for $\pi_n$ is the disjoint union of $\{\infty\}$ with a finite subset $\Sigma_n \subset \mathbb{C}$. The restriction $\pi_n|_{X_n}$ of $\pi_n$ to $X_n$ makes $X_n$ an unramified double cover of the complement $\mathbb{A}^1 \setminus \Sigma_n$ of $\Sigma_n$ in $\mathbb{A}^1$.

7.6.1.d. The ramification locus $\Sigma_n$ is the set of roots of a polynomial $\ell_n(B)$

$$
\ell_n(B) = 4Bs_n^2 + 4g_3(\Lambda)s_{n-2}s_n - g_2(\Lambda)s_{n-1}s_n - g_3(\Lambda)s_{n-1}^2
$$

of degree $2n + 1$ in the variable $B$ with coefficients in $\mathbb{Q}[g_2, g_3]$, where the polynomials $s_n, s_{n-1}, s_{n-2} \in \mathbb{Q}[g_2, g_3][B]$ are defined recursively by equations (7.3.6), starting with $s_0 = 1$ and $s_1 = (2n - 1)^{-1}B$. The recursive relation (7.3.6) implies that $\ell_n(B, g_2, g_3)$ is homogenous of weight $2n + 1$ if $g_2, g_3$ are given weights 1, 2, 3 respectively; the coefficient of $B^{2n+1}$ in $\ell_n(B)$ is a positive rational number.26

7.6.1.e. The polynomial $\ell_n(B)$ gives rise to another compactification $\hat{X}_n$ of $X_n$. Let $\hat{x}_n$ be the zero locus of the homogeneous polynomial

$$
F_n(\hat{A}, \hat{B}, \hat{C}) := C^2\hat{A}^{n-1} - \hat{A}^{2n+1}\ell_n(B/\hat{A})
$$

in the projective plane with projective coordinates $(\hat{A} : \hat{B} : \hat{C})$. By definition $\hat{X}_n$ is the partial desingularization of $X_n^\prime$, changing the local structure near the singular point $(0 : 0 : 1)$ by replacing the structure sheaf near $(0 : 0 : 1)$ by its normal closure in the field of fractions. More explicitly we replace a small Zariski open neighborhood of the point $(0 : 0 : 1)$ in $X_n^\prime$ by the corresponding open neighborhood of the curve

$$
u^2 = u \cdot (u^{2n+1}\ell_n(1/u));
$$

near $(u, \nu) = (0, 0)$; the coordinates are related by

$$
\frac{\hat{B}}{\hat{A}} = B = \frac{1}{u}, \quad \frac{\hat{C}}{\hat{A}} = C = \frac{\nu}{u^{n+1}}.
$$

The natural morphism $\hat{X}_n \to X_n^\prime$ is a homeomorphism, and is a local isomorphism outside the point $\infty$ which maps to the point $(0 : 0 : 1) \in X_n^\prime$. The projective curve $\hat{X}_n$ is reduced, irreducible and has arithmetic genus $n$; we call it the “hyperelliptic model” of $X_n$.

We have a “hyperelliptic involution” $i$ on $\hat{X}_n$, given by

$$
i : (\hat{A} : \hat{B} : \hat{C}) \mapsto (\hat{A} : \hat{B} : -\hat{C})
$$

in projective coordinates. The $X_n$ is the complement in $\hat{X}_n$ of the fixed point set $(\hat{X}_n)^\prime$ of the hyperelliptic involution. We also have a morphism $\pi_n : \hat{X}_n \to \mathbb{P}^1$, defined by $\pi_n : (\hat{A} : \hat{B} : \hat{C}) \mapsto (\hat{A} : \hat{B})$ over the open subset of $\hat{X}_n$ where $\hat{A}$ is invertible, and $\pi_n : (\hat{A} : \hat{B} : \hat{C}) \mapsto (\hat{A} : \hat{B})$ over the open

---

26The coefficient of $B^i$ in $s_j(B)$ is

$$
\frac{n(n-1)(n-2)\cdots(n-i+1)}{2^{n-i+1}[(2n)(2n-1)(2n-2)\cdots(2n-i+1)][(2n-1)(2n-3)(2n-5)\cdots(2n-2i+1)]}
$$

for $i = 1, \ldots, n$. 
subset of \( \hat{X}_n \) where \( \hat{C} \) is invertible. One of the fixed points \( \hat{\iota} \) is \( \hat{\infty} \). The map \( \hat{\pi}_n \) induces a bijection from \((\hat{X}_n)^\dagger\) to \( \Sigma_n \).

The hyperelliptic projection \( \hat{\pi}_n \) is compatible with the hyperelliptic involution \( \hat{\iota} \) on \( \hat{X}_n \) in the sense that \( \hat{\pi}_n(P) = \hat{\pi}_n(P') \) if and only either \( P' = P \) or \( P' = \hat{\iota}(P) \), for any two points \( P, P' \in \hat{X}_n \). The restriction of the triple \((\hat{X}_n, \hat{\pi}_n, \hat{\iota})\) to the open subset \( X_n \subset \hat{X}_n \) is naturally identified with the restriction to \( X_n \) of the triple \((\hat{X}_n, \hat{\pi}_n, \hat{\iota})\).

7.6.2. A natural and inevitable question is:

Is there an isomorphism between the two triples \((\bar{X}_n, \bar{\pi}_n, \bar{\iota})\) and \((\hat{X}_n, \hat{\pi}_n, \hat{\iota})\) which extends the natural isomorphism between the complements of the fixed point sets of \( \iota \) and \( \hat{\iota} \)?

The parallel properties of the two compactifications reviewed in 7.6.1 suggest that the answer is likely “yes”. Since both \( \bar{X}_n \) and \( \hat{X}_n \) are reduced and irreducible, to answer this question affirmatively, we need to show that the natural identification of the “common open” dense subset \( X_n \) of both sides extends to an isomorphism.

We will see in Lemma 7.6.4 that methods in the previous part of this section already shows that the identity map on \( X_n \) extends to a morphism \( \phi : \bar{X}_n \to \hat{X}_n \) of algebraic varieties. That \( \phi \) is a morphism at \( \infty = [0]^n \) is a consequence of (and equivalent to) Corollary 7.5.1.

The following properties of the morphism \( \phi : \bar{X}_n \to \hat{X}_n \) between reduced irreducible complete algebraic curves are easily deduced from previous arguments:

(a) \( \phi \) is bijective on points, i.e. \( \phi \) is a homeomorphism.
(b) \( \phi \) is an isomorphism over \( X_n = \bar{X}_n \setminus (\bar{X}_n)^\dagger \).
(c) \( \phi \) is an isomorphism near the point \( \infty = [0]^n \). This is a rather trivial case of Zariski’s Main Theorem and is easily verified directly.

So we are left with showing that \( \phi \) is a local isomorphism at each point of \((Y_n)^\dagger\), ramification points “at finite distance”.

7.6.3. The properties 7.6.2(a)–(c) of the morphism \( \phi : \bar{X}_n \to \hat{X}_n \) do not formally imply that \( \phi \) is an isomorphism: it may happen that there exists a point \( P \in Y_n \subset \bar{X}_n \) such that the injection

\[
\phi^*: \mathcal{O}_{\bar{X}_n, P} \to \mathcal{O}_{\hat{X}_n, \phi(P)}
\]

induced by \( \phi \) between the stalks of the structure sheaves of \( \bar{X}_n \) and \( \hat{X}_n \) at \( P \) and \( \phi(P) \) is not an isomorphism. If this “undesirable” phenomenon happens at one ramification point \( P \in Y_n \), the arithmetic genus of \( \bar{X}_n \) will be strictly smaller than \( n \), the arithmetic genus of \( \hat{X}_n \). To put it differently, the fact that \( \phi : \bar{X}_n \to \hat{X}_n \) is a bijective morphism tells us that the hyperelliptic model \( \bar{X}_n \) can “only be more singular” than \( \hat{X}_n \).
If we can show that the arithmetic genus of $\hat{X}_n$, it will follow that $\phi$ is an isomorphism. This approach may well be possible, but we will take an easier route: We have seen that the discriminant $\text{disc}(\ell_n(B))$ of $\ell_n(B)$ is a non-zero holomorphic modular form for the full modular group $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})$. If the discriminant $\text{disc}(\ell_n(B))$ does not vanish when evaluated at the lattice $\mathcal{L} \subset \mathcal{C}$ in question, then the polynomial $\ell_n(B; \mathcal{L})$ has $2n + 1$ distinct roots in $\mathcal{C}$ and $\hat{X}_n$ is smooth, which forces the morphism $\phi : \tilde{X}_n \to \hat{X}_n$ to be an isomorphism.

Suppose now that the elliptic curve we are given is $\Lambda_{\tau_0} = \mathbb{Z} + \mathbb{Z} \tau_0$ for some $\tau_0 \in \mathcal{H}$ such that $\text{disc}(\ell_n(B))((\Lambda_{\tau_0})) = 0$. The idea now is embed the given situation in a one-parameter family such that the morphism $\phi$ is an isomorphism outside the central fiber, then use purity (Hartog’s theorem):

Let $\tau$ vary in a small open disk $D \subset \mathcal{H}$ containing $\tau_0$ such that $\text{disc}(\ell_n(B))((\Lambda_\tau)) \neq 0$ for all $\tau \in D$ and get a family of maps $\phi_\tau : \tilde{X}_{n, \tau} \to \hat{X}_{n, \tau}$ parametrized by $D$. Use the fact that $\phi_\tau$ is an isomorphism for all $\tau$ in the punctured disk $D^* = D \setminus \{\tau_0\}$ and $\phi_{\tau_0}$ is an isomorphism outside the a finite subset of $\tilde{X}_{n, \tau_0}$ to show that $\phi_{\tau_0}$ itself is an isomorphism.

Details will be carried out Proposition 7.7

**Lemma 7.6.4.** The identity map $\text{id}_{\tilde{X}_n} : X_n \to \tilde{X}_n$ on $X_n$ extends uniquely to a morphism $\phi : \tilde{X}_n \to \hat{X}_n$.

**Proof.** Let $(x_1, y_1), \ldots, (x_n, y_n)$ be the Weierstrass coordinates of the product $E^n = E \times \cdots \times E$. The affine coordinate $B$ of $X_n^*$ is given by $B = (2n - 1) \sum_{i=1}^n x_i$. From the proofs of theorems 7.3 and 7.4 we see that the other affine coordinate $C$ of $X_n^*$ can be expressed by polynomials in the $x_i$’s and $y_i$’s: $C = y_i : \prod_{j \neq i} (x_i - x_j)$ for all $i = 1, \ldots, n$. It follows that the birational map $\phi$ from $\tilde{X}_n$ to $\hat{X}_n$ is a morphism at every point of $\tilde{X}_n \setminus \{\infty\}$. Corollary 7.5.1 implies that $\phi$ is a morphism at $\infty$ as well.

**Proposition 7.7.** The morphism $\phi : \tilde{X}_n \to \hat{X}_n$ is an isomorphism.

**Proof.** We may and do assume that the given lattice $\Lambda$ is $\Lambda_{\tau_0}$ for an element $\tau_0 \in \mathcal{H}$. Let $(x_1, y_1), \ldots, (x_n, y_n)$ be the Weierstrass coordinates of $E^n = E \times \cdots \times E$ as in the proof of Lemma 7.6.4, where $E = \mathcal{C}/\Lambda$. It suffices to prove the following Claim: for every monomial $h(x, y)$ in $x_1, \ldots, x_n, y_1, \ldots, y_n$, the restriction to $X_n$ of its $S_n$-symmetrization

$$\Pi_{S_n}(h) = (n!)^{-1} \sum_{\sigma \in S_n} h(\sigma(x), \sigma(y))$$

is the pull-back under $\phi$ of a polynomial in $B$ and $C$.

We have seen in the proofs of theorems 7.3 and 7.4 that the restriction to $X_n$ of every symmetric polynomial in $x_1, \ldots, x_n$ can be expressed as a polynomial in $B$. Because

$$\mathbb{C}[x_1, \ldots, x_n, y_1, \ldots, y_n]/(y_1^2 - 4x_1^3 + g_2x_1 + g_3)_{1 \leq i \leq n}$$
is a free module over the ring of symmetric polynomials $\mathbb{C}[x_1, \ldots, x_n]^S_n$ with basis given by monomials of the form
\[ x^r y^s = \prod_{i=1}^n x_i^{r_i} \cdot \prod_{i=1}^n y_i^{s_i} \]
with $0 \leq r_i \leq n - i$ and $0 \leq s_i \leq 1$ for all $i = 1, \ldots, n$, and the symmetrization operator $\Pi_{S_n}$ is linear over the ring of symmetric polynomials in $x_1, \ldots, x_n$, it suffices to prove the claim in the case when $h(x, y)$ is one of the above basis elements $x^r y^s$. In principle one should be able to show directly that the symmetrization $\Pi_{S_n}(x^r y^s)$ of $x^r y^s$ is a polynomial in $B$ and $C$. Here we take an easier way out using purity as indicated in 7.6.3.

Let $\tau$ vary over $\mathbb{H}$, and consider the fiber product over $\mathbb{H}$ of $n$ copies of the universal elliptic curve whose fiber over $\tau \in \mathbb{H}$ is $E_\tau = (\mathbb{C}/\Lambda_\tau)$. Over the open subset of the $n$-time fiber product of $E \smallsetminus \{0\}$, we have affine coordinates $x_1, y_1, \ldots, x_n, y_n$ as before. Let $\mathcal{X}_n$ be the relative affine spectrum over $\mathbb{H}$ of
\[ O_{\mathcal{X}_n} \left[ (x_1, \ldots, x_n, y_1, \ldots, y_n) \right] / \left( \prod_{1 \leq i < j} (x_i - x_j) \right)^{-1} \]
Let $\mathcal{X}_n^*$ be the relative projective curve over $O_{\mathbb{H}}$ defined by the homogeneous polynomial
\[ F_n(\hat{A}, \hat{B}, \hat{C}) = \hat{C}^2 \hat{A}^{n-1} - \hat{A}^{2n+1} - \hat{B}/\hat{A} \]
as in 7.6.1.e, where $g_2 = g_2(\Lambda_\tau)$ and $g_3 = g_3(\Lambda_\tau)$ in the definition of $\ell_n(B)$. Let $\Phi : \mathcal{X}_n \to \mathcal{X}_n^*$ be the morphism extending the identity map on $\mathcal{X}_n$. Let $U$ be the complement in $\mathcal{X}_n^*$ of the set of all ramification points over those $\tau$’s where the discriminant $\text{disc}(\ell_n(B))$ vanish, so that $U$ is the complement of the union of the section $\infty$ a discrete set of points in $\mathcal{X}_n^*$. We know that $\Phi$ is an isomorphism over $U$. Notice that the two-dimensional variety $\mathcal{X}_n^*$ is normal outside the zero locus of $\hat{A}$, because it is regular in codimension one and Cohen-Macaulay in codimension two.

For any symmetrized monomial $\Pi_{S_n}(x^r y^s)$ of $x^r y^s$ considered earlier, we know that its restriction to $U$ is equal the pull-back of the restriction to the a regular function on the open subset $\Phi(U)$ of codimension at least 2. By purity (or Hartog’s theorem for normal analytic spaces) this regular function on $\Phi(U)$ extends to a regular function $h_{x_0}$ on the complement in $\mathcal{X}_n^*$ of the section $(0 : 0 : 1)$ “at infinity”. Restricting to the fiber over $\tau_0$ and the Claim follows. We have proved the $\phi$ is an isomorphism for every elliptic curve of the form $E_\tau = \mathbb{C}/\Lambda_\tau$, for any element $\tau$ in the upper-half plane $\mathbb{H}$. \hfill \Box

**Remark 7.7.1.** There is a variant of the proof following the same idea, but uses Zariski’s Main Theorem instead of purity: take the closure $\overline{\mathcal{X}}_n$ of $\mathcal{X}_n$ in the $n$-th symmetric product of the universal elliptic curve. Apply Zariski’s Main theorem to the map from the normalization of $\overline{\mathcal{X}}_n$ to $\overline{\mathcal{X}}_n^*$. One needs
to be careful when it comes to the operation of taking the closure, for in general this operation does not commute with the operation of passing to a fiber. Details are left to the interested reader.

8. Deformations via blow-up sequences

The purpose of this section is to prove Theorem 0.7.4 concerning the blow-up set of a blow-up sequence $u_k$ to the mean field equation $\triangle u_k + e^{u_k} = \rho_k \delta_0$ with $\rho_k \to 8\pi n$. Part (2) of the theorem, namely the case $\rho_k = 8\pi n$, has been completely analyzed in §§5, 6 and 7. Thus it remains to deal with the case $\rho_k \neq 8\pi n$ for all $k$. The result is proved in Theorem 8.8 and Corollary 8.9.

8.1. The setup. Write $\rho = 8\pi \eta$, $\eta \in \mathbb{R}^+$, and let $u$ be a solution of

\begin{equation}
\triangle u + e^u = 8\pi \eta \delta_0
\end{equation}

on $E = \mathbb{C}/\Lambda$, $\Lambda = \mathbb{Z}\omega_1 + \mathbb{Z}\omega_2$, where $|\eta - n| < \frac{1}{2^2}$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$. Such an $u$ exists even if $\eta \neq n$, because the topological Leray-Schauder degree is non-zero. We are interested in knowing the behavior of $u_\eta$ when $\eta \to n$.

By Liouville’s theorem on simply connected domains outside 0 and asymptotic analysis at 0, locally around $z = 0$ we can express $u$ by a multi-valued meromorphic developing map $f$ through

\begin{equation}
u(z) = \log \frac{8|f'(z)|^2}{(1 + |f(z)|^2)^2}.
\end{equation}

The Schwarzian derivative $S(f)$ of $f$ is equal to

$S(f) = u_{zz} - \frac{1}{2}u_z^2 = -2(\eta(\eta + 1)\varphi(z) + B_\eta)$

for some constant $B = B_\eta$. Thus $f$ can be written as a ratio of two independent solutions of the Lamé equation

$w'' = (\eta(\eta + 1)\varphi(z) + B)w$.

The indicial equation is given by

$\lambda^2 - \lambda - \eta(\eta + 1) = (\lambda - (\eta + 1))(\lambda + \eta) = 0$.

The difference $\eta + 1 - (-\eta) = 2\eta + 1$ is an integer if and only if $\eta \in \frac{1}{2}\mathbb{Z}$. The case of half integers is excluded from our assumption. (The case $\eta = n$ indeed admits logarithmic free fundamental solutions.) Hence a set of fundamental solutions $w_1, w_2$ near $z = 0$ can always be written as

$w_1(z) = z^{\eta+1}h_1(z), \quad w_2(z) = z^{-\eta}h_2(z)$

where $h_i(z)$ are holomorphic with $h_i(0) = 1$. Set $H(z) = h_1(z)/h_2(z)$ and

\begin{equation}
f_\ast(z) = \frac{w_1}{w_2} = z^{2\eta+1}H(z) = e^{(2\eta+1)\log z}H(z).
\end{equation}

Here a particular branch of $f_\ast$ is selected near $z = 0$ as above, and all the branches of $f_\ast$ constitute a function defined on $\mathbb{H}$, the universal cover of the
once punctured (cuspidal) torus $E^\times = E \setminus \{0\}$. We denote the corresponding global analytic function by

$$f_*(\xi), \quad \xi \in \mathbb{H},$$

where 0 is a cusp which is mapped to $z = 0 \in E$, with

$$f_*(0) := \lim_{\xi \to 0} f_*(\xi) = 0.$$ 

Similarly in writing the developing map $f$ as a global analytic function $f(\xi)$, it is also understood that a particular branch is selected.

To be precise, the fundamental group of $E^\times$ with respect to a fixed base point $x_0 \neq 0$ is free of rank two:

$$\pi_1(E^\times; x_0) \cong \mathbb{Z} \ast \mathbb{Z}$$

since $E^\times$ is homotopically equivalent to "the figure 8". Let $g_i \in \text{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$ be the covering transformations of $\mathbb{H} \to E^\times$ corresponding to the two generators of $\pi_1(E^\times, x_0)$, and $\Gamma$ be the rank two free subgroup in $\text{SL}(2, \mathbb{R})$ generated by $g_1$ and $g_2$. Then any two branches $f_1, f_2$ of $f$ are related by $f_1 = Sf_2$ for some $S \in \text{PSU}(2)$. In particular, a solution $u$ is equivalent to an $\text{PSU}(2)$ representation $r = r_\mu$ of $\Gamma \cong \pi_1(E^\times; x_0)$ determined by two matrices $S_1 = r(g_1)$ and $S_2 = r(g_2)$ in $\text{PSU}(2)$ with

$$f(g\xi) = r(g)f(\xi).$$

Since $f = (af_1 + b)/(cf_1 + d)$, it is easy to see that

**Lemma 8.2.** Either $\lim_{\xi \to 0} f(\xi) = \infty$ or $\lim_{\xi \to 0} f(\xi)$ exists as a finite value.

We denote the limit by $f(0)$ no matter it is finite or infinite.

**Lemma 8.3.** If $f(0) = 0$, then $f = Af_*$ for some constant $A \neq 0$. If $f(0) = \infty$, then $f = A/f_*$ for some constant $A \neq 0$.

**Proof.** From (8.1.3), we compute

$$f_*(e^{2\pi i}z) = e^{4\pi i\eta}f_*(z) = f(\xi)$$

with

$$\eta := \begin{pmatrix} e^{2\pi i\eta} & 0 \\ 0 & e^{-2\pi i\eta} \end{pmatrix}.$$

More precisely, this means that

$$f_*(g_2^{-1}g_1^{-1}g_2g_1\xi) = S_2^{-1}S_1^{-2}S_2S_1f_*(\xi) = \gamma f_*(\xi) = e^{4\pi i\eta}f(\xi)$$

where $\xi \mapsto z$ and $g_2^{-1}g_1^{-1}g_2g_1\xi$ is the corresponding lifting of $e^{2\pi i}z$ in $\mathbb{H}$. For simplicity we denote $\xi = g_0 = g_2^{-1}g_1^{-1}g_2g_1 \in \Gamma$.

If $f(0) = 0$, we may write

$$f = \frac{aw_1 + bw_2}{cw_1 + dw_2} = \frac{af_*}{cf_* + d} =: \gamma_0f_*$$

with $b = 0$ and $ad = 1$ ($\gamma_0 \in \text{SL}(2, \mathbb{C})$). Now

$$f(\xi) = \gamma_0f_*(\xi) = \gamma_0\gamma f_*(\xi) = \gamma_0\gamma_0^{-1}f(\xi)$$
is also a developing map for \( u \), hence
\[
\gamma_0\gamma_0^{-1} = \begin{pmatrix} e^{2\pi i \eta} & 0 \\ (e^{2\pi i \eta} - e^{-2\pi i \eta})c & e^{-2\pi i \eta} \end{pmatrix} \in \text{PSU}(2).
\]

Since \( \eta \not\in \frac{1}{2}\mathbb{Z} \), this forces that \( c = 0 \) and then \( f = a^2 f_* \).

The proof for the case \( f(0) = \infty \) is analogous and is thus omitted. \( \Box \)

8.4. Monodromy. We continue the discussion on the full monodromy effect on \( f \). The representation \( r : \Gamma \to \text{PSU}(2) \) is determined by
\[
(8.4.1) \quad f(g_1 \xi) = S_1 f(\xi), \quad f(g_2 \xi) = S_2 f(\xi),
\]
for some \( S_i \in \text{SU}(2) \). Denote \( g_0 = g_2^{-1} g_1^{-1} g_2 g_1 \) and represent \( r(g_0) \) by a matrix \( \beta \in \text{SU}(2) \). Then \( S_2^{-1} S_1^{-1} S_2 S_1 = \pm \beta \), or
\[
(8.4.2) \quad S_2 S_1 = \pm S_1 S_2 \beta.
\]

By choosing \( f \), and hence \( \xi \), suitably we may assume that
\[
S_1 = \begin{pmatrix} e^{i\theta} & 0 \\ 0 & e^{-i\theta} \end{pmatrix}, \quad S_2 = \begin{pmatrix} a & -b \\ b & a \end{pmatrix},
\]
with \( |a|^2 + |b|^2 = 1 \).

**Lemma 8.5.** Under such a normalization, i.e. \( S_1 f = e^{2i\theta} f \), we have \( f(0) \neq 0, \infty \).

**Proof.** If \( f(0) = 0 \), by Lemma 8.3, \( f(z) = z^{2\eta + 1} f_0(z) \) where \( f_0 \) is holomorphic in a neighborhood of \( 0 \). In this case, \( \beta = \gamma \) as is defined in (8.3.1). Relation (8.4.2) says that \( a = \pm a e^{2\pi i \eta} \) and \( be^{-2i\theta} = \pm be^{-2\pi i \eta} \). Since \( e^{2\pi i \eta} \neq \pm 1 \), we must have \( a = 0 \), hence \( |b| = 1 \) and \( \theta = (\eta + \frac{k}{2}) \pi \) for some \( k \in \mathbb{Z} \). Then
\[
f(g_0 \xi) = e^{4\pi i \eta} f(\xi) \quad \text{and} \quad (8.4.1) \quad f(g_1 \xi) = e^{2i\theta} f(\xi), \quad f(g_2 \xi) = -\frac{b^2}{f(\xi)}.
\]

In particular, the logarithmic derivative
\[
g := (\log f)' = \frac{f'}{f} = \frac{2\eta + 1}{z} + \frac{f_0'(z)}{f_0(z)} \quad \text{(a pole near } z = 0\text{)}
\]
is a (single-valued) elliptic function on the doubled torus \( E' = \mathbb{C}/\Lambda' \) with \( \Lambda' = \mathbb{Z} \omega_1 + \mathbb{Z} 2\omega_2 \). We will show that this is not possible.

Indeed, if \( g \) has a zero at some \( z = z_0 \) then \( f \) must be smooth at \( z_0 \) with \( f(z_0) \neq 0 \) and \( f'(z_0) = 0 \). From (8.1.2), \( u \) must be singular at \( z_0 \). From the mean field equation (8.1.1) this forces that \( z_0 \equiv 0 \pmod{\Lambda} \). But \( f \) has a zero at \( 0 \) and a pole at \( \omega_2 \). So we get a contradiction.

If \( f(0) = \infty \), again by Lemma (8.3), \( f(z) = z^{-(2\eta + 1)} f_0(z) \) with \( f_0 \) holomorphic near \( 0 \) and \( f_0(0) \neq 0 \). In this case \( \beta = \gamma^{-1} \) and we still conclude that \( a = 0 \). The remaining argument is the same except that now we use the fact that \( f \) has a pole at \( 0 \) and a zero at \( \omega_2 \) to derive a contradiction. \( \Box \)
Lemma 8.6. Up to two choices, the matrices $S_1 = \begin{pmatrix} e^{i\theta} & 0 \\ 0 & e^{-i\theta} \end{pmatrix}$ and $\beta$ are determined by $f(0)$ and $\eta$. The matrix $S_2 = \begin{pmatrix} a & -b \\ b & \bar{a} \end{pmatrix}$ is also determined up to a phase angle.

Proof. Write $f(0) = q/p$ with $|p|^2 + |q|^2 = 1$. The ambiguity for doing so is only up to an irrelevant phase angle. Consider the developing map

$$\gamma_0 f = \frac{pf - q}{\bar{q}f + \bar{p}}.$$ 

Then $\gamma_0 f(0) = 0$, and by Lemma 8.3 we have $\gamma_0 f(g_0 \xi) = \gamma \gamma_0 f(\xi)$ (where $\gamma$ is defined in (8.3.1)) and hence $f(g_0 \xi) = \gamma_0^{-1} \gamma \gamma_0 f(\xi)$. That is,

$$\beta = \gamma_0^{-1} \gamma \gamma_0 = \left( \frac{|p|^2 \alpha + |q|^2 \bar{\alpha}}{p\bar{q}(\bar{\alpha} - \alpha)} \right)$$

where $\alpha := e^{2\pi i n}$. Relation (8.4.2) gives rise to two cases according to the $\pm$ sign:

$$\begin{align*}
(1 \mp (|p|^2 \alpha + |q|^2 \bar{\alpha})) a &= \pm p\bar{q}(\bar{\alpha} - \alpha)b, \\
(e^{2i\theta} \mp (|p|^2 \alpha + |q|^2 \bar{\alpha})) b &= \mp p\bar{q}(\bar{\alpha} - \alpha)a.
\end{align*}$$

Since $||p|^2 \alpha + |q|^2 \bar{\alpha}| < 1$, the first equation determines $a$ and $b$ up to a phase angle, and then the second equation determines $\theta$.

Notices that since $f$ exists a priori, the consistency of these equations are automatic. In fact, by working out the substitutions we get

$$e^{2i\theta} = -\frac{1 \mp (|p|^2 \alpha + |q|^2 \bar{\alpha})}{1 \mp (|p|^2 \alpha + |q|^2 \bar{\alpha})},$$

which is clearly of norm one.

\[\square\]

8.7. Blow-up sequence. Now suppose that $u_k$ is a sequence of solutions corresponding to $\eta = \eta_k$ as $k \to \infty$ which blows up at $p_1, \ldots, p_m$ as $k \to \infty$. By the PDE method [8], we have that $m = n$, $p_i \neq 0$ for all $i$ and $u_k(z) \to -\infty$ for all $z \in E \setminus \{p_1, \ldots, p_n\}$. Let $f_k(z)$ be the normalized developing map defined above. Then we have the following theorem:

Theorem 8.8. There is a constant $A \neq 0$ such that $f_k(z) \to A$ uniformly on compact sets in $E \setminus \{p_1, \ldots, p_n\}$. Furthermore, $\{p_1, \ldots, p_n\} = \{-p_1, \ldots, -p_n\}$.

Proof. We first note that the corresponding Lamé equations

$$w'' = (\eta_k(\eta_k + 1)\gamma + B_k)w$$

converges: $\eta_k \to n$ and $B_k \to B$, which follows from the fact that $u_{k,z}$ and $u_{k,zz}$ converge uniformly on compact sets in $E \setminus \{p_1, \ldots, p_n\}$.

Now let $f_k(0) = q_k/p_k$ with $|p_k|^2 + |q_k|^2 = 1$. By Lemma 8.3,

$$\frac{p_k f_k - q_k}{q_k f_k + p_k} = c_k f_{k,*},$$
with \( c_k \neq 0 \) and
\[
\frac{f_{k,s}(z)}{w_{k,1}(z)} = z^{2n+1} H_k(z).
\]
Here \( w_{k,1} \) and \( w_{k,2} \) are fundamental solutions to (8.8.1),
\[
w_{k,1}(z) = z^{2n+1} h_{k,1}(z), \quad w_{k,2}(z) = z^{-n} h_{k,2}(z),
\]
where the \( h_{k,i} \)'s are holomorphic near \( z = 0 \), \( h_{k,i}(0) = 1 \) and \( H_k := h_{k,1}/h_{k,2} \).

It follows that \( w_{k,i} \to w_i \) and \( f_{k,s} \to f_* := w_1/w_2 \) uniformly on compact set in \( E \) away from the discrete set of poles/zeros of \( w_1 \) and \( w_2 \). Clearly
\[
w''_i = (n(n+1)\varphi + B)w_i,
\]
and locally near \( 0 \), \( w_1(z) = z^{n+1} h_1(z), w_2(z) = z^{-n} h_2(z), h_i(0) = 1 \). The above statements can also be understood in terms of the corresponding global analytic functions \( f_k, w_{k,i}, f_{k,s}, f_* \) etc. on \( \mathbb{H} \).

Most of our analysis will be based on the limiting behavior of the expression
\[
(8.8.2) \quad f_k = \frac{\tilde{p}_k c_k f_{k,s} + q_k}{-q_k c_k f_{k,s} + p_k}.
\]
Let \( p_k \to p, q_k \to q, |p|^2 + |q|^2 = 1 \).

If \( c_k \to c \neq 0 \), then
\[
f_k(\xi) \to f(\xi) := \frac{\tilde{p} c f_*(\xi) + q}{-q c f_*(\xi) + p}
\]
extcept for some discrete set. Hence
\[
u_k(z) \to u(z) = \log \frac{8|f'(z)|^2}{(1 + |f(z)|^2)^2}
\]
uniformly on compact sets outside some discrete set. This contradicts to our assumption that \( u_k \) blows up as \( k \to \infty \), hence \( c = 0 \) or \( c = \infty \).

We claim that \( f_k(0) = q_k/p_k \to A \neq 0, \infty \), and \( c_k \to c = 0 \). With this done, the convergence statement \( f_k(z) \to A \) in the theorem then follows from the claim by (8.8.2).

If \( A = \infty \), then \( p = 0 \) and \( |q| = 1 \). Since \( \alpha = e^{2\pi i\eta} \to 1 \), substituting \( |p_k|^2 = 1 - |q_k|^2 \) in (8.6.2) and divided by \( \alpha - \bar{\alpha} \) throughout leads to
\[
(8.8.3) \quad \left( \frac{\alpha}{1 \pm \alpha} + |q_k|^2 \right) a_k = p_k \bar{q}_k b_k,
\]
which implies that \( a_k \to a = 0 \) and \( b_k \to b \) with \( |b| = 1 \).

If \( c = 0 \), then from (8.8.2) it is clear that
\[
f_*(\xi) \neq \infty \quad \implies \quad |f_k(\xi)| \to \infty.
\]
However, if we select \( \xi \) so that \( f_*(\xi) \neq \infty \) and \( f_*(\xi) \neq \infty \) (such \( \xi \) certainly exists) then this implies that
\[
(8.8.4) \quad f_k(\xi_2\zeta) = S_{k,2} f_k(\xi) = \frac{a_k f_k(\zeta) - b_k}{b_k f_k(\xi) + a_k} \to 0,
\]
which contradicts $|f_k(g_2 \xi)| \to \infty$.

If $c = \infty$, again by (8.8.2)

$$f_*(\xi) \neq 0 \implies f_k(\xi) \to 0.$$ 

The convergence is uniform on compact sets outside the zeros of $f_*$. But then $f_k(g_2 \xi) \to \infty$ which contradicts $f_*(g_2 \xi) \to 0$ provided that $f_*(g_2 \xi) \neq 0$. Thus $A \neq \infty$.

For $f_k(0) \to A \neq \infty$, by working on a branch and substituting $f_k(z) = z^{2\eta_k} + O(|z|^{2\eta_k+2})$ into (8.8.2) we get

$$f_k(z) = \frac{q_k}{p_k} + \frac{c_k}{p_k^2} z^{2\eta_k+1}(1 + O(|z|)).$$

By assumption, the regular part of $u_k(z)$ at $z = 0$ tends to $-\infty$, i.e.

$$u_k(z) - 4\eta_k \log |z| \bigg|_{z=0} = \log |f_k(z)|^2 z^{-4\eta_k} \bigg|_{z=0} = \log \frac{8|c_k|^2(2\eta_k + 1)^2}{|p_k^2(1 + |f_k(0)|^2)^2}} \to -\infty,$$

which implies that $c_k \to c = 0$.

We need to exclude the case $A = 0$. If $A = 0$, then $|p| = 1$ and $q = 0$. Again (8.8.3) implies that $a = 0$ and $b = 1$. Since $c = 0$, by (8.8.2),

$$f_*(\xi) \neq \infty \implies f_k(\xi) \to 0.$$ 

Then by the expression (8.8.4) we have $f_k(g_2 \xi) \to \infty$ whenever $f_*(\xi) \neq \infty$ and hence $f_*(g_2 \xi) = \infty$ by the above implication. But as before we may select $\xi$ so that both $f_*(\xi) \neq \infty$ and $f_*(g_2 \xi) \neq \infty$. This leads to a contradiction and the claim is thus completely proved.

It remains to show that $\{p_1, \ldots, p_n\} = \{-p_1, \ldots, -p_n\}$. From (3.1.3), we see that $S(f_k(-z)) = S(f_k)(-z) = -2(\eta(\eta + 1)\omega(-z) + B_k) = S(f_k(z))$, hence $f_k(-z)$ is also a developing map for $u_k$. Since $f_k(z)$ is normalized, $f_k(-z)$ is also normalized, hence we still conclude $f_k(-z) \to A$ outside $\{p_1, \ldots, p_n\}$. This implies that this set coincides with $\{-p_1, \ldots, -p_n\}$. The proof is complete.

**Corollary 8.9.** Let $u_k$ be a blow-up sequence of solutions to (0.1.3) with $\rho_k = 8\pi\eta_k \to 8\pi n, \eta_k \neq n$, and $S = \{p_1, \ldots, p_n\}$ be the blow-up set. Then $S$ is a finite branch point of the hyperelliptic curve $C^2 = \ell_n(B)$.

**Proof.** The blow-up set $S$ satisfies equations (5.7.2), or equivalently (5.7.4), thus $S \in Y_n$. Now Theorem 8.8 implies that $\{p_i\}_{i=1}^n = \{-p_i\}_{i=1}^n$, hence $S \in Y_n \setminus X_n$, i.e. it is a branch point of $X_n$. \qed

**8.10. Further remarks.** Consider the regular part of the Green function

$$\tilde{G}(z, q) := G(z - q) + \frac{1}{2\pi} \log |z - q|.$$
Let $S = \{p_1, \ldots, p_n\} \subset E$. For $i = 1, \ldots, n$ we define
\[
  f_{p_i}(z) := 8\pi(G(z, p_i) - \tilde{G}(p_i, p_i)) + \sum_{j \neq i}(G(z - p_j) - G(p_i - p_j)) - 8\pi n(G(z) - G(p_i)),
\]
\[
  \mu_i := \exp(8\pi(G(p_i, p_i) + \sum_{j \neq i}G(p_j - p_i)) - 8\pi nG(p_i)).
\]

Then we have the important global quantity associated to the set $S$:
\[
  D(S) := \lim_{r \to 0} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \mu_i \left( \int_{\Omega_i \setminus B_i(p_i)} e^{f_{p_i}(z)} - \int_{\mathbb{R}^2 \setminus \Omega_i} \frac{1}{|z - p_i|^4} \right),
\]
where $\Omega_i$ is any open neighborhood of $p_i$ in $E$ such that $\Omega_i \cap \Omega_j = \emptyset$ for $i \neq j$, and $\bigcup_{i=1}^{n} \overline{\Omega_i} = E$.

Under the hypothesis of Corollary 8.9, it was shown in [12] for $n = 1$ and in [37] for general $n \in \mathbb{N}$, but in a slightly different context, that
\[
  \rho_k - 8\pi n = (D(S) + o(1)) \exp(-\max_{T} u_k).
\]

In general it is very difficult to compute $D(S)$ even for $n = 1$. In the case $n = 1$, the hyperelliptic curve is the torus $E$ and the branch points consist of the three half-periods. In the very special case that $T$ is a rectangular torus, the sign of $D\left(\frac{1}{2}\omega_i\right)$ has been calculated: $D\left(\frac{1}{2}\omega_2\right) < 0$ and $D\left(\frac{1}{2}\omega_i\right) > 0$ for $i = 1, 2$. Furthermore $D\left(\frac{1}{2}\omega_1\right) < 0$ if and only if $\frac{1}{2}\omega_1$ is a minimal point [12].

It is clear that when $D(S) \neq 0$ its sign provides important information when we study bubbling solutions (blow-up sequence) with $\rho \neq 8\pi n$ (e.g. if $D(S) > 0$ then the bubbling may only occur from the right hand side). Also in the case $\rho_k = 8\pi n$ for all $k$, if the blow-up family $u_{\lambda}$ exists then $D(S) = 0$ trivially for $S$ begin the blow-up set.

In particular, we pose the following

**Conjecture 8.11.** For rectangular tori, there are $n$ branch points, on the associated hyperelliptic curve, with $D(S) < 0$ and $n + 1$ branch points with $D(S) > 0$.

This is known only when $n = 1$ as mentioned above.

Theorem 8.8 provides some connection between mean field equations and the branch points of the associated hyperelliptic curve. We expect that it should hold true universally. For example we might ask the following question on Chern–Simons-Higgs equation:

Suppose that $u_\varepsilon$ is a sequence of bubbling solutions of the CSH equation
\[
  \triangle u_\varepsilon + \frac{1}{\varepsilon^2} e^{u_\varepsilon}(1 - e^{u_\varepsilon}) = 8\pi n \delta_0 \quad \text{in} \ T.
\]

Is the bubbling set $\{p_1, \ldots, p_n\}$, as $\varepsilon \to 0$, a branch point of the hyper elliptic curve $C^2 = \ell_n(B)$?

This has recently been answered affirmatively for $n = 1$ and for $E$ a rectangular domain [37, 38].
References


[15] L. Crawford; On the solutions of Lamé’s equation $\frac{d^2 u}{dn} = U\{ n(n + 1)u + B \}$ in finite terms when $2n$ is an odd integer; Quarterly J. Pure Appl. Math. 27 (1895), 93–98.


[24] C. H. Hermite; Sur quelques applications des fonctions elliptiques, Gauthier-Villars, Paris, 1885; memoir first published as 26 articles in 6 volumes of Comptes Rendus Acad. Sci. Paris (7 in t. 85 (1877), 5 in t. 86 (1878), 2 in t. 89 (1879), 5 in t. 90 (1880), 2 in t. 93 (1881) and 5 in t. 94 (1882)).


[38] C.-S. Lin and S. Yan; _Exact number of solutions to Chern–Simons–Higgs equation with double vortex points_, preprint 2013.


[51] van der Waerden; _Algebra, vol I_, Ungar, 1949; first German edition 1930.


MEAN FIELD EQUATIONS, HYPERELLPTIC CURVES AND MODULAR FORMS: I

DEPARTMENT OF MATHEMATICS, UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA, PHILADELPHIA

E-mail address: chai@math.upenn.edu

DEPARTMENT OF MATHEMATICS AND CENTER FOR ADVANCED STUDIES IN THEORETIC SCIENCES (CASTS), NATIONAL TAIWAN UNIVERSITY, TAIPEI

E-mail address: csclin@math.ntu.edu.tw

DEPARTMENT OF MATHEMATICS AND Taida Institute of Mathematical Sciences (TIMS), NATIONAL TAIWAN UNIVERSITY, TAIPEI

E-mail address: dragon@math.ntu.edu.tw